

[Khumo]

I hid there as they raped my mother and sisters right in front of my father. It was a joyous time for them - they laughed, cheered and made jokes. Everything was okay for them, they didn't feel hesitant or sorry at all. I was just eight years old and nobody deserves to see what I saw or even go through what I went through and what my family members went through. They knew that they were going to kill them so why force themselves on the females?? What kind of animals are they?? I hate them so much and I will not rest until I have finished all of them. I don't care about dying or going to prison but I need to avenge my family's death, I've got nothing to lose.

...

My thoughts were interrupted by a phone call. I got a call from Thato. Trust me, this girl won't just let me be. I've been mean to her so many times, hoping that she'd back off but no, she still wants to be my friend.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: What do you want, Thuto?

Thato: (Giggles) It's Thato.

Me: I don't like you. How many times have I told you that??

Thato: I want to take you out for lunch.

...

I rolled my eyes and hung up on her. She kept calling over and over again so I switched off my phone and went on about my day.

...

[Thato]

I like Khumo so much, I just wish she could stop being a loner and notice me. She has been like this forever. We went to the same primary school together and even went to the same high school and tertiary school together. She's very cold and mean but I am really drawn to her. I genuinely like her and I want her to see me as her friend.

...

[Later That Day]

[Khumo]

I was chilling in my room when my "mom", Sarah walked in.

...

Sarah: (Smiles) Hey, baby.

Me: Hey, mom.

Sarah: Are you okay?

Me: Yes, I am okay.

Sarah: So why are you refusing to see your friend?

Me: My friend? I don't have friends.

Sarah: I am talking about Thato.

...

Hold on, what is she saying? How does she know Thato? Didn't I tell that girl to stay away from me? This is what I was trying to avoid.

...

Sarah: Honey?

Me: Who's Thato?

Sarah: Well, she's waiting for you in the living room.

Me: Huh?? What??

Sarah: Go to her. Don't stay mad at your friend for too long.

...

I was fuming but I didn't want to show it. I quickly wore my shoes and headed to the living room. That stupid girl was truly there.

...

Thato: (Smiles) Hey, Khu...

...

I grabbed her hand and walked out of the house with her. I pushed her inside the car and drove far away from my home.

...

Thato: What's wrong?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Thato: (Smiles) Wow, you are so cool.

...

I stopped the car and pointed a gun at her but trust me when I say that she didn't look scared or bothered. She smiled. Yes, she smiled. What is wrong with her?? How do I get rid of her?? I don't want friends!!!

...

Me: Why are you smiling?

Thato: Khumo, you are very cool. I truly like you.

Me: Heyyy, this is a real gun.

Thato: I know. I have seen guns before so it's nothing new.

Me: I will kill you. I'm about to kill you.

Thato: (Smiles) Okay, no problem.

Me: I mean it.

Thato: Khumo, I am not scared at all. I know that you won't shoot me.

Me: And what makes you say that?

Thato: I just know. I'm never wrong about people. I like you and I will continue to stick around.

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: You've been following me around for years, aren't you tired?

Thato: Nope.

Me: Heyyy, how do you even know where I live?

Thato: I had to find your home, you refused to join me for lunch so blame yourself.

...

I have killed before and I am still planning to kill everyone who gets in my way or wrong me so why am I not able to pull the trigger when it comes to this fool?? What is wrong with me??

...

I left the gun in the car and got out. I began to take a walk. Believe me when I say that Thato followed me. I didn't have words for her anymore so I kept quiet.

...

Thato: I remember when you were a new kid in my class years ago. We were both young and in primary school but I saw pain in your eyes. I still see that pain even after years of knowing you. What is really bothering you?

Me: You don't know me. Just shut up.

Thato: I like you, I really do and I'm not able to stop following you around.

Me: Thato, I am not into girls.

Thato: (Giggles) I am also not into girls. I like you as a friend, that's all.

Me: Why? Why me?

Thato: I don't know. I am just drawn to you.

Me: Stop it. Do it for yourself.

Thato: No. I can't. I am very loyal.

Me: Are you also loyal to people who don't like you?

Thato: You are different.

...

I stopped walking and looked at her.

...

Me: How am I different? What do you know about me? Who are you?

Thato: My name is Thato Modise and I...

Me: Modise??

Thato: Yeah, that's my surname.

...

My eyes filled with tears. I was really starting to get emotional.

...

Why am I being emotional in front of others? This is unlike me.

...

Thato: What's wrong, Khumo? You can talk to me. I am a good listener.

Me: Please stay away from me, I am begging you.

Thato: I am sorry, I can't do that.

Me: Do you want to die? I am antisocial and I hate people so stop it already.

Thato: What's bothering you?

...

I walked back to the car. Thato came running and got in.

...

Thato: You can't leave me in the middle of nowhere.

Me: Fine. I'm taking you home and I never want to see you again after today.

Thato: (Giggles) Uh.

Me: Uh? What's the meaning of that?

Thato: Fine, I'll stop following you.

Me: Good.

...

She gave me her address and I took her home. She looked at me and smiled just before getting off the car.

...

Me: What? Stop smiling at me. I really don't like you.

Thato: Bye.

Me: Go.

Thato: See you tomorrow.

Me: Huh?? Tomorrow?? You said that you'll stop following me around.

Thato: I lied because I didn't want you to leave me behind. Okay, bye.

Me: Hey, I...

...

She didn't let me finish. She got out of the car and ran inside this other yard.

...

Seriously, why can't that girl stay away from me? It's been years. I genuinely think that she's a good person that's why I need her to stay away from me. I can't be close with anyone because all I want is revenge and I can't let anyone who likes/loves me get hurt. What do I do to make Thato stay away from me? I

want to put my plan into action very soon so I don't need distractions. I swear to God, that girl has been following me around since primary school days when we were still eight years old. We are now done with tertiary school and we are in our twenties and she's still following me around. What do I do?? Does she really want to know what's bothering me? Well, I am not planning to tell her but this is what happened...

## Chapter 2

[Rewind - Back to the day Khumo's family members were murdered... The story now begins. Camilla Modise will later be known as Khumo Jones.]

...

[Camilla AKA Khumo]

It's after school and my mommy did not come to pick me up. I have been waiting for so long and I am scared to be waiting alone.

...

My teacher came to me.

...

Teacher: Camilla, have you been waiting here all alone?

Me: Yes, teacher.

Teacher: Your family members always take turns in getting you from school. I believe your mommy is the one who's supposed to take you home today.

What's taking her so long?

Me: I don't know, teacher.

Teacher: But my dear, you shouldn't be here alone. It's not safe for a little girl. I always tell everyone to wait for their guardian inside the school, in the waiting room. You can't be standing alone at the gate.

Me: Sorry teacher, I felt safe here because the security man is around.

Teacher: Okay, but let's go inside. I'll call your family members.

Me: Okay. Thank you, teacher.

Teacher: (Smiles) Aww, my sweet angel. Let's go.

...

[Some Hours Later]

My family members forgot about me. Is it because I recently turned 8 years old? My sister always told me that I'll be a big girl once I turn 8 years old and that I will walk to school and go back home alone. I thought that she was joking. It looks like she was serious.

...

Teacher: I don't know why your family members are still not here. I tried calling them and couldn't get through. It's now 18:30 so I will have to take you home, my dear.

Me: (Smiles) Teacher, I am hungry.

Teacher: I'll get you something to eat on our way to your home.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, teacher.

Teacher: (Smiles) It's okay, my dear.

...

My teacher checked my address on my school journal and drove me home. She got me something to eat on our way to my home. She was really nice to me like always. We finally arrived at home and I was shocked to see cars I didn't know parked outside.

...

Teacher: So many cars? There must be an event.

Me: Did they forget about me because of an event?

Teacher: It's possible but at least you have me.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. I'll go inside the yard.

Teacher: I'll walk you in.

...

We got out of the car. I took out my card and opened the gate.

...

I wonder why I can't see the security man around. Is he also attending the event? My family members always treat him so good. He's part of us.

...

Teacher: Okay, thank you for opening for us. I'll take you inside the house.

Me: No. I'm now a big girl. I'll go in alone. You can walk out. I'll open the gate again.

Teacher: (Chuckles) Who said that you are now a big girl?

Me: My sister told me that I'll be a big girl when I turn 8.

Teacher: You just turned 8 last week so you are not a big girl. You are just in Grade 2. What do you know about being a big girl?

Me: But you and the other teachers always tell me that I'm too smart for my age.

Teacher: (Smiles) Yes, you are intelligent and know a lot of things. You will go far in life.

Me: (Smiles) Am I a big girl?

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Teacher: (Smiles) Okay, you are a small-big girl.

Me: Huh?? What's that?

Teacher: It means that you are small but also big.

Me: (Giggles) Okay. I'll take that. Bye, teacher.

Teacher: I will take you in. I insist.

Me: Okay.

...

We were about to go in when my teacher suddenly grabbed my hand and quickly ran with me to the other side of the house.

...

Teacher: I think they saw us. What do we do?

Me: What happened?

Teacher: Baby girl, I am sorry but I think that your family members are held hostage. I saw through the window. You are short and didn't see what I saw and I think that someone saw me so we need to quickly hide. But where??

Me: What is hostage?

Teacher: I'll explain later. Let's hide.

...

Because I trust my teacher, I did as she said. I took out my card and opened the secret door that led us to this other secret room only known by family members. It's made of glass, people inside the room can see and hear what's happening outside the room but people outside the room can never see or hear what's inside the room. The room has many doors - doors that lead outside or inside the house, doors that can lead to other different rooms in the house. It's a perfect secret room that can never be discovered by others. Some men with guns stood outside the door that we used to get in and I started to believe that something was wrong.

...

Man 2: Are you sure that you saw someone running this way?

Man 1: Yes. I think I saw a woman running this way. I saw her through the window.

Man 2: But who could come inside the yard? The security guy is inside the house and he's one of us.

Man 1: Was I hallucinating?

Man 2: Clearly. There's no one here and all the family members are inside the house.

Man 1: I don't feel at ease. Maybe I should check the footage. I really think I saw a woman through the window.

Man 2: What footage? Boss already destroyed cameras. You are not even sure. You think. Just let this go. No one is here, we've been searching.

Man 1: Okay. Let's go back inside.

Man 2: Good.

...

I turned to the other side of the room and started crying. All my family members were not in good condition at all. My teacher was crying with me but also comforted me. She wiped off my tears.

...

Teacher: Wait, did they really not see us or the door we used to get in?

...

I nodded.

...

Teacher: That's good.

Me: There are many doors and windows in this room. They can't be seen until my card and... no, it's a secret.

Teacher: It's okay. I understand. We are obviously not seen or heard by anyone so we need to remain in this room. You are a big girl so I need you to be strong.

Me: You keep changing your words. Am I now a big girl?

Teacher: I know... I... ehh... I... well...

Me: I need you to calm down. You are way too scared. You are more scared than me.

...

My teacher took a deep breath and wiped away her tears.

...

Teacher: I need to call the cops.

Me: Unfortunately you left your phone in the car.

Teacher: Oh, yes. I was charging...

...

My teacher got interrupted by the sound of a gun. We went closer to the glass and saw blood. Just like that, my brother was shot.

...

To be continued...

### Chapter 3

[Teacher aka Kate]



I can't believe what we just witnessed. How can people be this cruel?  
How do they keep on torturing people that are tied up?

...

I quickly covered Camilla's eyes with my hands but she was fighting me. She wanted to see everything but I just couldn't let her. This little girl just turned 8 last week... she's so young and doesn't deserve to see all these things.

...

Camilla: (Screams) LET ME GO, LET ME GO, TEACHER!!!!

Me: No, I am sorry.

...

Camilla and I started going on and on. She was fighting me. She wanted me to leave her and surprisingly she was strong. I was now getting tired and she succeeded in pushing me away. I sat on the floor and just cried.

...

Camilla: What is wrong with you? Did I hurt you?

...

Yes, she scratched me like crazy but I hid my arms with a scarf that was around my neck because I didn't want to trouble her even more. I know that she didn't mean to scratch me so I don't blame her.

...

Camilla: Teacher??

Me: I am fine.

Camilla: Sorry.

...

I wiped away my tears and hugged her.

...

Me: No, I am sorry.

Camilla: I understand what's happening. They killed my brother so they are going to kill everyone.

Me: No, don't say that. What do you know about killing? Your brother is...

Camilla: Teacher, I know that there's life and death. I may be young but I know. They used a gun to shoot my brother and I can see blood. My brother is dead.

Me: No, No,...

Camilla: I will no longer cry.

Me: No, you can cry. It's okay to cry.

Camilla: I will die with my family members. I have to go to them now.

Me: Camilla, please. Don't do it. You can't go in there.

Camilla: Don't you get it? I will be alone forever if I don't die with my family.

Me: I am here. I am with you.

...

She broke off the hug and cupped my face with her small hands.

...

Camilla: You have your own family so how can I let you be there for me? They will also kill you and your loved ones. So please stay in this room, I will show you how the card...

Me: NO!!!! PLEASE LIVE!!!! I NEED YOU TO LIVE. YOU HAVE A BRIGHT FUTURE.

Camilla: I...

...

We were interrupted by a small girl screaming. She's probably the same age as Camilla.

...

Camilla: Huh?? That is me!! But how??

Me: You are right. She looks like you.

...

We went closer to the glass to have a clearer look.

...

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Do you have a twin sister?

Camilla: No, I don't.

Me: So how come she looks like you?

Camilla: I... I don't know.

...

[On The Other Side of The Glass]

Man 1: They were right. Their daughter was sleeping in the room upstairs. I finally found her.

Man 2: (Laughs) She must be Camilla. Well, boss will be happy that we found this brat. This house is crazily big, I can't believe that we've been looking for that brat for so long.

Camilla's Dad: Please leave my daughter alone. She's just a baby.

Man 3: (Laughs) A baby? So what? When boss came here to destroy the cameras, he told us to kill the entire family members.

Camilla's Mom: But Camilla does not understand what's happening. Please let her go.

...

They slapped Camilla's mom.

...

Camilla's Lookalike: (Cries) I want my mommy, I want my mommy.

Man 3: (Laughs) Your mommy is right here. Which other mom do you want?? Are you a fool??

Camilla's Lookalike: No, she's not...

...

Camilla's father managed to get hold of a gun from the floor and shot Camilla's lookalike and five other men that were there. They shot him on the hand just when he was about to shoot more men.

...

Man 1: What was that about?

Camilla's Father: I am happy that I shot my own daughter. I can now die peacefully knowing that I protected her from all of you. You all don't deserve to even touch my daughter.

Man 1: (Shouts) HOW DARE YOU DO OUR JOB FOR US?? WE WILL TEACH YOU A LESSON!!!

...

Man 1 winked at the other remaining men and laughed. They seemed to understand what he was trying to say. They all started laughing and undressed Camilla's mom's and Camilla's sisters. The mother and the sisters were crying but nobody came to their rescue. All the men that were in that room raped them right in front of Camilla's father.

Camilla's father was slowly dying so he couldn't do anything. He was lying there, tied up with so many chains. He began to cry and curse.

...

Camilla's Father: Trust me, you will all die a miserable death. I know that she is seeing this now. She may not know what's really happening but she will take revenge on all of you one day. I curse all of you but I will die happily knowing that she's very intelligent. There are so many things I have taught her. She's very intelligent so she will teach all of you a lesson. My Little Diamond, live well and avenge us. 525263. I am very sorry. 297340. I will always praise you. 103500. I trust you. 593744. Take care and don't be afraid.

Man 2: What the hell is he saying??

Man 1: He's crazy. Let him be.

Man 3: I think that he was cursing us.

Man 4: Who cares? He's already dying. His Goddess will not help him at all.

Man 1: (Laughs) You are right. I think it's time. I had so much fun.

All The Men: (Laughs) We all did!! These women are sweet.

...

The man shot Camilla's family members immediately after raping the ladies. I looked at Camilla and she was not crying. I was beginning to worry so much about her. Why is she not crying? It's okay to cry.

...

Me: Camilla?

Camilla: They think that my father was cursing them but that's not it.

Me: Really? Who was your father talking about? A Goddess?

Camilla: Me. He always called me "My Little Diamond". He knows that I am here so he was talking to me.

Me: And the numbers? What was that about?

Camilla: Don't worry. I understood him very well. He was telling me so many things by speaking in codes.

Me: Oh, I see.

Camilla: Let's go.

Me: Huh??

...

To be continued...

Chapter 4[Teacher aka Kate]

Camilla: I said let's go.

Me: But I really don't want you to die. Please don't go to them. Everyone believes that you are dead since that girl looks exactly like you.

Camilla: I know. I will listen to my father. I'm not going to die. I want us to get out of this place.

Me: Wait, there must be telephones in this secret room, right?

Camilla: Mhmm, why?

Me: Why didn't you tell me sooner?? We could've asked for help.

Camilla: We were going to get caught, had we used the phones in this room.

Me: How?

Camilla: The other man there is a cop. I've seen him before. Had we called police, the call was going to be traced back to this house and those cruel men were definitely going to know that there's a secret room in this house.

Me: Oh, I see. You are really smart even at a time like this. Uhm, but earlier when I said that I wanted to call the cops you said that unfortunately I left the phone in the car. You sounded like you didn't mind me calling the cops.

Camilla: I never wanted you to call the cops. I was lazy to explain things to you that's why I sounded like I didn't mind you calling the cops.

Me: Oh, okay then. I hear you.

Camilla: Daddy also asked me not to seek help from the cops.

Me: When did he say that?

Camilla: In the morning, before I went to school. He told me that whenever we are in danger, we should stay away from the cops. He told me that I can only trust one person and his family members.

Me: Who?

Camilla: It's not important right now. But if you are asking if I trust you, yeah... I do. I really trust you.

Me: No, I wasn't asking that.

Camilla: There's a door in this room that will take us to the woods. It will lead us to a cave. When we finally get out of the cave, we'll be in the woods.

Me: Wow, okay then.

Camilla: It's going to take us two days to get out of the cave. I didn't finish the food you bought for me and I have water so we'll be fine.

Me: Did you say two days?

Camilla: Yes, two days. That means you'll miss school for two days. Well, the cave is the only way we can get out of this place safe and alive.

Me: I am not worried about myself. I am worried about you.

Camilla: Why??

Me: You are so young, how can you spend two days in the cave without proper food and sleep?

Camilla: You worry too much. Hold on, I'll get a phone from this room. You should call your family members and let them know that you are completely safe.

Me: Okay. I will also tell them to call the cops.

Camilla: Don't even think about that if you don't want your family members to die.

Me: How would they die?

Camilla: Daddy told me not to trust the cops. Do you think that if someone calls the cops and tell them to come to this place, there won't be bad results? You are wrong. The cops will definitely try their best to find the person who called and see that person as a threat just for speaking up for my family.

Me: Oh, is it that bad?

...

She nodded and gave me a phone to call my family members. I told my family members that I went away for some days and that I'll be back soon. I also asked them to tell the school for me.

...

We took what we needed to take and went through the door that led us to the cave.

...

[Hours and Hours Later]

Me: Milla, are you okay? We should rest.

Camilla: How many times do you want to rest?

Me: Are you not tired?

Camilla: No, I'm fine. We rested so many times.

Me: Okay. Please tell me...

Camilla: Yes, teacher. I'll tell you when I'm tired and want to rest.

Me: Do you think that it's day two already?

Camilla: I will tell you when it's day two.

Me: How would you know?

Camilla: I've been here so many times before. We've left marks on rocks to help us with everything. Red marks shows that we are still on day one. Once we start seeing blue marks, we'll be on day two but if we keep on resting every hour, we'll definitely be in this cave for more than three days.

Me: WHAT???? Are you serious??

Camilla: Yes. It takes us two days when we are fast and more than two days when we are slow.

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Okay, okay. Let's get going. Let's walk a little fast.

Camilla: Now you are talking.

...

[A Month Later]

[Camilla AKA Khumo]

I made sure that the moment we got out of the cave, I disappear without Teacher Kate noticing. She was getting us something to eat in this other restaurant when I decided to take off. I had to run away from her in order to protect her. Yes, I hid my face with her scarf the moment we left the cave so people were not able to see my face but I still had to be very careful. Teacher Kate wanted to take me to her place, how can I simply allow that? I had to leave so that she can always be safe. I live in my other family's house alone. It's a big house but not bigger than our main house. I am safe because no one knows this house. The code 525263 was daddy's way of telling me about this house. He told me about this house because his enemies does not know it. But, I can't do

this anymore. I am tired. I don't want to live anymore. I want to join my family members.

...

When daddy mentioned the code 593744, I knew right away that he was telling me to change my face. He taught me all about fake faces before and I have mastered the application. My new face looks really different compared to the face underneath but it also looks real. No one can tell that it's fake face. Now I understand why the girl who looked like me died with my family members on that day. Daddy must have made that little girl wear a fake face. It's like he saw everything coming, otherwise why would he get someone else to wear a face that looks exactly like my real face?? Why was my family members killed?? Who would even tell me when our security guard also betrayed us??

...

With my fake face, I took a walk to the restaurant. I didn't eat for two days so I was hoping that I would die along the way but it didn't happen. I arrived at the restaurant.

...

I bumped into Mr Jones, as I was about to walk into a restaurant. Mr Jones is my father's friend. I've seen him a lot and he was very close to my father.

...

I almost smiled and greeted him by his last name but I immediately remembered that I have a different face on and have to act like I don't know anyone.

...

Me: Uhh, sorry sir.

Mr Jones: (Smiles) It's okay, dear.

Me: Did you get hurt?

Mr Jones: (Laughs) How can I get hurt when I was bumped by a little, cute girl like you? I'm okay, my dear.

...

I wanted to hug him and cry but I remembered that daddy told me not to trust anyone except for one man and his family members. The truth is that man is not Mr Jones.



...

Me: How are you?

Mr Jones: Are you okay? You look sad.

Me: It's nothing. Sir, have you ever lost a loved one?

Mr Jones: Are you talking about death or breakup?

Me: Death.

Mr Jones: Yeah, you know how life is.

Me: Have you lost a friend to death?

...

He kept quiet but he was all smiles. What's making him smile? Is death something to smile about?

...

Me: Sir?

Mr Jones: No. Yes.

Me: No? Yes? What are you really saying?

Mr Jones: I lost a friend a month ago but he was a bad friend so I don't feel sad. Don't go around making friends with bad people, okay?

...

Is he talking about my daddy? He's lying. My daddy was a good man.

...

Me: Okay, sir.

Mr Jones: Okay, I am now leaving.

...

I noticed daddy's watch and I was shocked to see Mr Jones wearing it.

...

Me: Sir, wait.

Mr Jones: Yes?

Me: Your watch is very beautiful.

Mr Jones: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

I am going to ask him one question and if he gets it wrong, he's definitely my family members' killer.

...

To be continued...

Chapter 5[Mr Jones]

Oh, my goodness, she just fainted. I quickly took her to the hospital. The doctor told me that she hasn't been eating.

...

What could be wrong with her? She looks clean. She doesn't look like someone who hasn't been eating. Is she from a poor family? But... her clothes are looking very fancy. I can't leave her without knowing what's wrong with her.

...

[Some Time Later]

She finally woke up and my doctor took good care of her. She also fed her.

...

Me: Little girl, are you now okay?

...

She nodded.

...

Me: You fainted because you were hungry.

Her: Sorry.

Me: Why are you apologizing to me? Why didn't you eat?

Her: May I please ask you a question before I answer your question?

Me: Yes, go ahead, dear.

Her: I really love your watch and would like to know where you bought it.

Me: (Smiles) Why? Do you want to buy it for someone?

Her: I will buy it for my husband when I'm old enough.

Me: (Laughs) Well, I didn't buy it.

Her: Did someone give it to you?

Me: No. I made it myself. I'm the only one who owns it.

...

She kept quiet. I didn't understand what she was thinking about.

...

Me: Did you hear me?

Her: (Smiles) Yes. I'm wondering if you can make it for my husband one day.

Me: (Smiles) Of course. No problem.

Her: May I please get a closer look at it?

Me: No problem but please make sure that you don't drop it. I value it a lot.

Her: Okay, sir.

...

I gave the watch to her. She really likes it a lot.

...

Her: It's absolutely beautiful. I've never seen a watch like this before.

Me: That's why it only belongs to me.

Her: Do you love diamonds?

Me: I am not sure, why?

Her: It has a little diamond engraved on it.

Me: On the watch? Really?

Her: Yes.

Me: Wow. I didn't know that. I never saw the diamond you are talking about.

Her: How can you not know that? You are the one who made it.

Me: (Giggles) Uhh, well,... joke. I was just joking with you. I know about the diamond.

Her: (Smiles) Here you go... your beautiful watch.

...

She gave the watch back to me. I closely looked at it and saw the little diamond. I never knew there was a little diamond engraved on this watch, I wasn't lying. Well, who cares?? It's now mine.

...

Her: Sir, let me now answer your question. I ran away from an evil woman two days ago.

Me: Who?

Her: I have never had a home. I've been running away from different families. I lived with so many different families and they never treated me right so I had to run away always.

Me: That's bad. What's your name?

Her: I don't know.

Me: Do you not have a name?

...

She nodded.

...

Me: Wow, you must have had it tough.

Her: I am strong. I will live. I want to live. I won't die.

Me: That's the spirit. I'll be right back. I need to make a call.

Her: Okay.

...[Camilla AKA Khumo]

It's him. It's him. He killed all my family members. It's really him. Did he say that the watch is his?? Liar!!!! That watch belongs to my daddy and he made it himself. I was with my daddy when he made that watch. I was even helping him with some things and even asked him to engrave a little diamond on it. Mr Jones got the question wrong so he's definitely the killer. How can I die now?? I don't want to die anymore. I am strong. I will live. I want to live. I won't die. I will avenge my family members' death... it may not be now but the day will definitely come. I'm only 8 years old right now and I need someone to take care of me and enrol me at school. Who can be better than the killer of my family?? Yes, I lied about living with different families and running away because I realized that Mr Jones is not innocent at all. So I want him to take me to his home. I want to finish school so having a guardian will definitely help me get accepted in school.

...

[Mr Jones]

Well, my wife always wanted to adopt a baby girl so I was talking to her on the phone. I told her everything about the little girl I met today and she said I should bring her home with me.

...

I went back to the ward.

...

Me: Hey, do you want to go to my house with me?

Her: No, what do you want to do to me?

Me: (Giggles) Nothing. I promise you that we will treat you very good.

Her: We?

Me: Yes, I told my wife about you. You can live with me and my family members.

Her: Do you have kids?

Me: Yes, I do.

Her: How many?

Me: Four. Two boys and two girls.

Her: Do you love them a lot?

Me: Yes, I do. I would kill for them.

Her: And what if they don't like me? Would you kill me for them?

Me: Of course not. Why would I kill you?

Her: And why did you kill them?

Me: Pardon?

Her: (Giggles) Sir, I don't know what I'm saying. I guess I'm tired.

Me: Let's go to my house. My wife is waiting for us. She can't wait to meet you.

Her: Where are your children?

Me: Well, at school.

Her: I would also love to go to school.

Me: I will make sure that you go to the best schools.

Her: (Smiles) Schools????? Really????? Even school for big girls????? Tertiary?????

Me: (Smiles) Yes, I mean it. You will also go to Tertiary school.

Her: (Smiles) Okay. I will go with you. Thank you, sir.

Me: Good girl.

...

We got ready to leave the hospital.

...

[Mrs Jones]

I can't believe that my husband finally found a little girl we can adopt. I've been feeling empty ever since we lost our other baby girl so I can't wait to be a mother to a little girl my husband is bringing with.

...

My husband walked in with the little girl. Tears streamed down my face as I hugged the little girl.

...

Me: You are so beautiful.

Her: (Smiles) Thank you.

Me: Thank you for coming to my house.

Her: I promise to be a good girl. I always know everything because I read and study a lot but for some reason I didn't know the word hostage until last month.

...

I broke off the hug and wiped off my tears.

...

Me: Hostage? It's good that you didn't know that word.

Her: You are right.

Me: You look troubled. Are you okay?

Her: I have been through a lot. I had to know and understand the word hostage until it was too late.

Me: (Smiles) It's never too late to learn new words. We will definitely take you to school.

Her: What should my name be?

Me: Do you not have a name?

Her: Yes, I don't.

Me: How about... Kamie Jones?

Her: How about Khumo Jones? The name Khumo means Rich. I love it a lot.

Me: (Smiles) Okay. That's your name. Khumo Jones.

Chapter 6

[Camilla aka Khumo]

Today is the day that I bury Camilla Modise. I am now Khumo Jones and I will never forget the reason why I followed Mr Jones to his house. It is now time to start acting and I will make sure that I don't get caught

at all. Mrs Jones introduced herself to me as Sarah Jones. Mr Jones' name is Dean... Dean Jones.

...

Sarah: My dear, how old are you?

Me: I am 8 years old.

Sarah: Wow, you are the same age as her.

Me: Who are you talking about?

Sarah: (Smiles) My daughter, May.

Me: (Smiles) She must be beautiful like you.

Sarah: (Giggles) You are so sweet. Thank you.

Mr Jones: Are the two of you not seeing me?

Sarah: (Laughs) Sorry honey, I am just so happy to be with Khumo.

Mr Jones: (Smiles) It's okay. I hope that you'll be able to move on. She looks like she's one of us, doesn't she?

Sarah: (Smiles) Yes, she does.

Me: Move on from what?

Mr Jones: Uhh, it's nothing serious. I'll be in my study. My wife will take care of you.

Me: No. You promised me that you will take me to school that's why I agreed to come here with you.

Mr Jones: (Laughs) Don't worry. We still need to get you legal documents.

Me: Legal documents?

Sarah: Yes, dear. We need to do a lot. You said that you didn't have a name. You even came here empty handed.

Mr Jones: We will adopt you. Get you birth certificate and get you enrolled in school. You look like you are one of us so you will fit in.

...

Why do they keep on saying that I look like I'm one of them? What do they mean?

...

Me: How do I look like I'm one of you?

Mr Jones: Long curly hair, green eyes and skin that looks like ours.

Me: Oh.

Mr Jones: what's your race? Believe me, we don't have a problem with other races. We are not racist at all. We are a multiracial family and by looking at you, I feel like you could fit in easily and feel comfortable since you are not far from looking like us.

Me: Oh, I see.

Mr Jones: So, what's your race?

...

I'm doomed. I didn't think about this one. I am mixed race. My dad was Black South African Tswana man and my mom was White German but if I tell them the truth, won't I be in danger one day when they suspect me?? I can't tell them the truth now, can I?? Think Khumo, think!!

...

Mr Jones: Dear?

Me: Uhh, well, ...

...

What do I say?? What do I say?? Let me think like Camilla Modise and not like Khumo Jones. Khumo seems to be a fool, how can she do this to me at a time like this?????

...

Me: (Nervous Chuckle) Sir, I'm feeling very hungry. Sorry if I'm slow. What was your question again?

Mr Jones: Are you hungry again? My doctor fed you.

Me: What do you expect? I didn't eat for two days before your doctor fed me. By the way, I'm biracial. I'm half white and half coloured. My dad was white and my mom was coloured.

Mr Jones: (Smiles) That's interesting. You are truly beautiful.

...

Oh, did he fall for that?? That's good. Well, my real face is more beautiful than the fake face I'm wearing. Unfortunately I had to hide my real face and it's all thanks to you, Mr Jones.

...

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, sir.

Sarah: Do you remember your birthday, my dear?

Me: Yes, I do.



Sarah: So how come you never had a name?

Me: Well, I had names before but since I was given the names by those bad families, I always saw myself as nameless but I really remember my birthday.

Sarah: Oh, so that's what you meant when you said that you didn't have a name?

Me: Yes, Mrs Jones. Mr Jones, you may go but please take care of everything as soon as possible. I'm tired of running away and I trust you so I want to go to school as soon as possible.

Mr Jones: Don't worry, my dear. I have connections. I'll get everything ready in a week. Even home affairs and court worships me. You'll be going to school from next week.

I don't know a lot about home affairs and court so I need books to read about them. What else should I know? I think that I will need many books.

...

Me: Okay, Mr Jones. May I please go to your study and read?

Mr Jones: You should eat first.

...

Oh, yeah. I lied about being hungry now I have to eat when I'm not hungry. This is not nice.

...

Me: I will eat while reading. I promise you that I won't get food all over your books. I'm very neat.

Sarah: (Chuckles) My dear, Dean's books are boring. They are books for old people. I will get you children's books to read.

Me: No, I don't want children's books. Why would a smart person like me read children's books? That's boring.

...

Both Mr and Mrs Jones started laughing.

...

Why are they laughing?????? I'm serious. I read children's books only when I'm bored. I like reading interesting books. I've read all books in

my daddy's study. It took me time to finish them but I did it and gained some knowledge from them.

...

Mr Jones: (Smiles) You are very interesting. Let's go.

Sarah: I will get you something to eat and get your room ready. Please tell me if you need anything else.

Me: (Smiles) Yes. I'm fine for now. Please don't prepare big portions when making my food. I don't eat a lot.

Sarah: (Smiles) Okay, dear.

...

I followed Mr Jones to his study.

...

[Teacher aka Kate]

I still can't believe that Camilla disappeared just like that. I've looked for her everywhere and couldn't find her. I'm not able to sleep at night because I'm really worried about her. Is she safe wherever she is? Will I ever find her?

...

My son, Aiden walked in the kitchen.

...

Aiden: Mom, what is really wrong with you?

Me: What do you mean?

Aiden: You loved being a teacher. How can you just resign like that?

Me: I was really attached to her. How can I keep on going to that school?

Aiden: Who are you talking about?

Me: It doesn't matter.

Aiden: Where's your car?

Me: It's outside.

Aiden: You know that I'm not talking about that car.

...

I kept quiet. I know that he's talking about the car I left outside Camilla's home a month ago. I don't know where that car is. I went back for it two days after we got out of the cave and I didn't find it. I was in

disguise but I think that someone might be after me. Anybody can be after me, it's fine but at least Camilla can be safe, right? I'm truly not worried about myself. I'm only worried about Camilla.

...

Aiden: Mom?? Talk to me, please.

Me: Camilo, stop it, please.

Aiden: You never call me by that name. What's really wrong with you?

Me: It's your name, is it not?? Please leave me alone.

Aiden: I am...

Me: AIDEN CAMILO SMITH, LEAVE ME ALONE!!!!!!

...

I walked out of the kitchen and went to my room. I was in tears. What do I do?? Where is Camilla?? Camilla, please be safe. I need a sign to know that she's okay. Something, something... Please God, I need to know. I want to find her so bad.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

Mrs Jones came to the study after I finished eating the food she prepared for me. I was extremely full because I had to eat even when I knew that I was not hungry. I will do better next time; I will learn to be faster with my answers than I am right now.

...

Sarah: Khumo, your room is ready. Should we go and check it out?

Me: (Smiles) Yes, Mrs Jones.

Sarah: (Smiles) Come with me.

...

She took me to my new room and I froze when I saw a poster of a car that looks exactly like teacher Kate's car. How did I make such a big mistake?? Teacher Kate's car... we... we left it outside my old home and it has been a month. Am I caught already?? Why did this lady put up a poster of a car that looks exactly like Teacher Kate's car?? Did I just walk into a trap?? What do I do?? What do I do???????? Khumo Jones, you are very stupid... Camilla would never make such a mistake. WHAT DO I DO????????? God, I lied; I'm not burying Camilla

Modise today and I promise to never bury her. Please bring her out; I will be both Camilla and Khumo... please help me. WHAT DO I DO???????????

## Chapter 7

[Mrs Jones]

What's wrong with Khumo?? Does she not like the room at all?? She doesn't look happy. She actually looks scared.

...

Me: Why do you look scared?

Khumo: What's going on?

Me: What do you mean?

Khumo: Is it just a coincidence?

Me: What is?

Khumo: I don't like that car. I heard that my parents died driving it.

...

Oh, my goodness. I truly didn't know. I didn't mean to open up her wounds. I should've asked her what she would like. I'm such a bad person, am I not??

...

Me: I am so sorry. I didn't mean to hurt you.

Khumo: It's okay. I don't like posters. Any beautiful wall art is fine not posters of cars.

Me: I'm really sorry. She liked it so I thought that you would also like it.

Khumo: Who liked it?

Me: Let's sit down.

Khumo: Okay.

...

We sat down.

...

Me: The truth is I lost a daughter a month ago. Her name is Maya. She's May's twin sister. I mentioned my daughter, May earlier to you. She's the same age as you. I've been feeling very empty ever since we lost Maya so I wanted to adopt a little girl to help me heal. Maya loved

posters of different cars in her bedroom so I completely forgot to ask you what you like. I'm sorry. I should have not done that. You are Khumo and not Maya. You are not May's twin sister. I'm sorry, my dear.

Khumo: It's okay, Mrs Jones. I'm sorry for what happened to your daughter, Maya. How did you lose her?

Me: She's missing. She's not dead but as a mother, I feel like she's dead wherever she is.

Khumo: You could be wrong. Be positive.

Me: The thing is there's nothing that my husband cannot do and there's no one he cannot find. We've been looking for Maya for so long and we still can't find her so that's why I think that she might be dead.

Khumo: Is your husband powerful?

Me: (Smiles) Something like that.

Khumo: I see.

...

I removed the poster from the wall.

...

Me: Do you like your room now?

Khumo: (Smiles) I do.

Me: Okay. I'll help you take a shower and change clothes. You'll wear May's clothes for now.

Khumo: I'm okay. I can help myself.

Me: Are you sure?

Khumo: Yes. I'll take a shower on my own. I am a big girl. I don't need help.

Me: (Smiles) Okay. I'll get May's clothes and toiletries for you, is that okay?

...

She nodded. I went to May's bedroom to get what I needed and went back to Khumo.

...

Me: Here you go.

Khumo: Thank you.

Me: I'm sorry that I'm making you use May's things but I promise you that I'll buy you everything you need before end of today.

Khumo: (Smiles) Thank you, Mrs Jones. But won't May get mad at me when she comes back from school?

Khumo: Okay. Thank you.

Me: I am sorry if you don't like the toiletries. I'll buy the ones you like soon.

Khumo: No problem but I can't use a towel and toothbrush that were used by somebody else. I just...

Me: (Smiles) No worries, dear. The towel and toothbrush are brand new.

Khumo: (Smiles) Okay. Thank you. Bye.

Me: I'll be with my husband in the study room. You may come there if you need anything else.

Khumo: Okay. I'll go to the bathroom now.

...

I smiled at her and went to my husband's study room.

...

Me: Dean, I really like her.

Mr Jones: I also like her a lot.

Me: I told her about Maya. Well, she doesn't like car posters like Maya.

Mr Jones: It's fine. She's her own person.

Me: (Smiles) That's true.

Mr Jones: We laughed at her when she said that she's smart but the truth is she's very smart. She knows big words. She knows how to calculate big numbers without using a calculator. She knows how to solve puzzles. She really does not read children's books. Can you believe that she solved a puzzle that I've been struggling to solve for two years with my friends and family members?? She solved it within five minutes.

Me: (Smiles) Are you serious? Dean, no.

Mr Jones: I was here with her. I saw everything.

Me: Wow, she's impressive.

Mr Jones: We might have found someone who would solve a lot of things for us. She doesn't need to know all the shady things we do but she can definitely be helpful.

Me: That's right but we shouldn't treat her like a slave. I really like her and I want us to treat her as a family member.

Mr Jones: Of course. I also like her. She's going to be the Camilla Modise of this family. Whenever I think about how Mr Modise used to brag about Camilla Modise, I lose it. He made me feel so small and that's the other reason why he had to die. How dare he??

Me: And he died with his entire family members. No one can stop us from ruling everything now.

Mr Jones: You are absolutely right. Camilla Modise is also dead. Now our family has Khumo Jones.

Me: (Smiles) The Camilla Modise of our family.

Mr Jones: Yessssss!!!!

...

We laughed.

...

Me: They were not gangsters like us but somehow they were always an obstacle. They always got things we wanted and also wanted to stop us from enjoying life.

Mr Jones: They were too righteous but it became a problem when they competed for the same business tender with us. I knew that I had to quickly befriend that man so that I can easily kill him and his family members.

Me: Now the tender is ours because there's no other competition. We will never stop being rich.

Mr Jones: Absolutely. I actually want us to move to Modise's house from next month.

Me: Oh, my goodness... my dream house. Did you finally buy it?

Mr Jones: No, I didn't buy it. I have connections so I got it for free.

...

We laughed.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I heard everything. I actually followed Mrs Jones to the study room because I wanted to ask her for another towel. Who knew that I would

hear everything?? I had a lump on my throat. I wanted to scream. I wanted to cry. I wanted to burst. I wanted to be hugged. I wanted to ask them many questions. I was really in so much pain but unfortunately I had to act strong and make sure that I don't get caught. It's painful, it's really painful.

...

I immediately went to the footage room or control room as others would call it and tampered with the entire footage of the day to make sure that they don't later find out that I was actually outside the study room, listening to everything.

...

I headed back to my bathroom and just sat under running shower water. My heart felt like it was about to explode. I was in so much pain. The pain was extremely unbearable. I felt like I was losing it. I felt like I would just die right there. Business tender???? Really???? Daddy bragging about me???? Did my family members really die just because of a business tender and just because daddy used to brag about me???? Is that really all???? Would people get brutally killed just for those reasons???? I felt like I was losing it. I was really not okay. Should I just cry or will they hear me and ask me questions???? I was truly in so much pain.

## Chapter 8

[Later That Day]

[Mrs Jones]

I went to the shopping mall with Khumo to buy her things she needed and she looked extremely happy. I know that she lost her parents a long time ago in a car accident and has been running from all the families she lived with so I want to make her forget about her painful past. I will make her very happy and get her everything she asks for. I'm really drawn to her and this is not because I lost my other daughter. There's something about Khumo that makes me so happy.

...

Me: Dear, I think that we got everything you asked for.



Khumo: (Smiles) Yes, I am very happy.

Me: I can tell that you are happy. I'm also happy because you are happy.

Khumo: I'll use the ladies room.

Me: Let me go with you.

Khumo: No. You can sit on this bench. I'll be right back.

Me: Okay. I'll wait for you. At least I can see the ladies room from here. Go ahead. Please clean the toilet seat before you sit down.

Khumo: (Smiles) Don't worry. I never sit down when it comes to public toilets. I have my way. Hygiene is everything to me so I'll still clean up the toilet seat even though I won't sit down.

Me: (Smiles) You are incredibly smart. I'm very happy. Go, my dear.

Khumo: Okay.

...

I'm truly happy and I'm also happy with Khumo. She's only 8 years old but one would think that she's actually a teenager. What am I even saying?? Not all teenagers behave like her. My children are nothing like Khumo. Khumo is way smarter and neat. I used to have 5 children, 2 boys and 3 girls and now since Maya disappeared, I have 2 boys and 2 girls. My first son's name is Oliver and he's 20 years old. My second son's name is Daniel and he's 18 years old. My first daughter's name is Kelsy and she's 15 years old. My second daughter's name is May and she's 8 years old. I am still the one who cleans up after all my children. They are very messy and talking to them is a waste of time so it's truly amazing to have someone like Khumo. I can tell that Khumo will not be giving me a headache like my children. I'm truly blessed to have Khumo. She's good with everything. Why couldn't all my children be like that? Well, I still love them and would do absolutely anything for them but I wish they were like Khumo.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

As much as I'm hurt, I had to continue acting like I am fine the moment I finished taking a shower and seeing The Jones' faces. I love the fact that they all believe that I'm happy. It should always be like that.

...

Well, I saw teacher Kate going to the ladies room. I'm happy to know that she's still okay. I also went to the ladies room just to have a closer look at her. I have a different face and I used May's toiletries so I definitely do not smell like how I usually smell so teacher will not notice me and I want it like that.

...

[Teacher aka Kate]

I was about to wash my hands when I saw a girl looking at me. She looked really happy to see me.

...

Me: (Smiles) Hey, dear.

...

She didn't say anything. She just smiled and left.

...

That was really weird but for some reason I feel happy. She's probably the same age as Camilla but she definitely does not smell like Camilla. Yes, I know exactly how Camilla smells like.

...

[An Hour Later]

[May]

Mom arrived at home with some girl who was wearing my clothes. I lost it.

...

Me. Mom, who is she?? Why is she wearing my clothes??

Sarah: Dear, her name is Khumo. She's...

Me: (Yells) YOU TOLD LETTY NOT TO COME TO WORK TODAY SO WHY DIDN'T YOU DO HER JOB AND PREPARE FOOD FOR ME???? I AM HUNGRY RIGHT NOW AND I WANT TO EAT!!!!

Sarah: Baby, I'm sorry. I didn't know that you'd arrive early. I will quickly prepare something to eat for you. Khumo, this is my daughter, May.

Me: TELL HER TO TAKE OFF MY CLOTHES RIGHT HERE AND RIGHT NOW!!!!

Sarah: Hey, stop it. Why are you so mean?

...

I went closer to Khumo and slapped her. How dare she?? Mom got mad and slapped me. I was so shocked. Today my mom slapped me for the first time and she did it for a stranger. I am so shocked and hurt. I will never forgive Khumo for this.

...

I looked at mom and spoke calmly.

...

Me: Mom, did you just slap me for her?

Sarah: I told you to stop it, didn't I?

...

I grabbed Khumo and started pulling the clothes she was wearing but my mom pushed me away. Khumo immediately ran upstairs. Hold on, why is she going upstairs? Who is she? I will beat her up.

...

I attempted to run after Khumo but dad walked in and stood before me. I got scared immediately and looked down.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

Wow, that girl is a bully. I still can't believe that she slapped me. I've never been slapped before. I've never been in this situation so I'm still shocked. I ran away not because I'm scared of her but because I didn't want to end up slapping her in front of her mom. I don't want to ruin things for myself that's why I ran away but the truth is I've been doing Taekwondo since I was five years old and it gets better as I keep growing. I have not been to classes since my family members were murdered a month ago but I will definitely ask Mr Jones to enroll me in Taekwondo classes close to my family's other house. Taekwondo is excellent for all ages so I will not stop. I would've kicked that girl if it wasn't because of her parents. I don't want to mess up things for myself so I just had to run away but trust me, I won't forget what she did and I'll make her pay without getting caught.

...

Mrs Jones walked in with the things she bought for me.

...

Sarah: My dear, I'm truly sorry.

Me: Is she always like that? She was also rude to you.

Sarah: Yes, she's always like that.

Me: You should discipline her.

Sarah: I tried so many times but I keep on failing.

Me: I'm so sorry.

Sarah: I should be the one apologizing.

Me: Let me change the clothes. You may go out.

Sarah: (Giggles) Are you shy to change in front of me?

Me: (Giggles) Yes, I'm not yet used to you.

Sarah: (Smiles) It's okay, dear. I understand.

Me: Actually it's fine. Sit down. I'll change in the bathroom.

Sarah: Okay.

...

There's a bathroom inside my bedroom so I just went inside the bathroom. I wore my new clothes and went back to Mrs Jones.

...

Me: Here you go... May's clothes.

Sarah: (Smiles) You look absolutely beautiful.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. Should we go for a drive?

Sarah: Really?

Me: If you don't mind.

Sarah: (Smiles) Let's go.

Me: Did you prepare food for May?

Sarah: Her dad left the house with her in anger.

Me: Why?

Sarah: He's angry because of what May did to you so I think that he went to teach her a lesson.

Me: Oh, what kind of a lesson?

Sarah: I don't know. My children always get very scared of Dean when he's angry.

Me: Oh, I see.

Sarah: Let us leave. I actually want to see a house that we will move into from next month. My husband finally got it.

Me: Oh, why are you moving? What's wrong with this house?

Sarah: This house is not our dream house so we are moving to our dream house.

Me: Oh, that's nice. You look really happy.

Sarah: (Smiles) I am truly happy. The obstacles are finally out of our way.

Me: (Smiles) What obstacles?

Sarah: Mhmm, well, it's nothing important.

...

She's talking about my family's main house. Truly speaking, when I arrived here with Mr Jones earlier today I thought that Mrs Jones was different until I overheard her conversation with Mr Jones in the study room. Is she really calling my family members obstacles?? Wow.

...

Well, I was actually planning to make her pass at my family's main house so that I can check if teacher Kate's car is still there but I didn't think that she'd want to go there with me. Am I really going to live in that house again? Is it fair?

...

We finally arrived at my family's main house after some time. It turns out that it's not that far from The Jones' house.

...

Sarah: Should we go inside?

Me: Huh? Do you want me to go in with you?

Sarah: (Smiles) Yes. Let's go.

Me: Okay.

...

I don't want to go in but I have to. Well, I don't see my teacher's car around. Did she take it or did someone else do that? I have to find out what really happened to the car so this is where the code 297340 comes in. With this code, daddy was reminding me about the Street Hidden Camera - The footage can only be watched in the secret room. Hold on, did my daddy see his death coming? Why do I feel like he was prepared? Yes, The Modises used to communicate a lot in codes. The codes that daddy mentioned before he died was not the only codes of our family. There's more. There are so many different codes used for different meanings. I didn't think that the code 297340 would ever be useful since it's just about a street hidden camera. We also never used that code but now I can tell that it will be helpful. Teacher's car was

parked outside the yard so I will get to know what happened to it but that means that I have to go to the secret room without Mrs Jones noticing. How will I do that? I don't have my card. When I met with Mr Jones at the restaurant, I only had money with me. I left my card in my other family's house. We use only a fingerprint for the other house. Hold on, Mrs Jones coming here means that she has the card to open. I can only blame the security guard who betrayed us. Well, I will have to use Mrs Jones' card to go to the secret room but how can I avoid being caught?

## Chapter 9

[Mrs Jones]

I'm so happy to finally call this house mine. I've eyed it for years and now I finally got what I wanted.

...

I opened the gate with the card and drove in. I felt like I was in paradise. The yard, the house; everything is truly breathtaking. The Modises were truly rich; this house is like a hotel. Why did they need such a big, luxurious house? Well, I don't blame them. I feel like I'm dreaming right now.

...

Me: Khumo, what do you think?

Khumo: (Smiles) It's truly beautiful. I like it a lot.

Me: (Smiles) Let's go inside.

Khumo: Okay, let's go.

...

We went inside. I couldn't hide my excitement.

...

Khumo: It's clean.

Me: Of course it is. Everything is perfect.

Khumo: Please teach me how to use the card.

Me: No problem. Come, I'll show you. With this card, you can open the gate and the doors of this house.

Khumo: (Smiles) Cool.

...

I showed her how to use the card. She looked really happy just like me.

...

Me: You can take a look around on your own. I'll also do the same.

Khumo: Are you sure?

Me: Yes, dear. You can even go and choose your own room.

Khumo: The house is really big. Where would I even start?

Me: (Smiles) That's the fun part about this house. Go, dear.

Khumo: Okay. I'll see you soon.

Me: Keep the card. It's yours from now on. I have another card.

Khumo: Okay.

...

I gave her the card. The reason why I told her to look around on her own is because I wanted to go to the main bedroom of the house and gloat over the deaths of The Modises. The best thing is to do it in the main bedroom. The Jones finally won so of course I should be happy.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

Wow, she just gave me the card without me asking. What a good thing to happen to me.

...

I can tell that the cameras are off. Well, Mr Jones had destroyed them on the day he killed my family members so I don't need to worry about getting caught. One thing I like about the card is that for it to open the secret room, I have to let it scan my eyes. It's almost like an eye lie detector but it's a little different. When I directly look into the black circle at the back of the card, my watch will turn red to show that the card is connected to the watch and scanning my eyes. Once the watch turns blue, I have to blink twice then the watch will turn green immediately after I've blinked twice. Green means that the door is finally open and when the watch goes back to neutral, it means that the door is closed, locked and not visible to anyone. This is what I wanted to tell teacher about the card last time when we hid in the secret room but something stopped me. I trust her but she doesn't have to know everything. The security guard had his own card since we trusted him

but he also doesn't know anything about the secret room and he doesn't know what the black circle at the back of the card is. I feel like no one will ever know anything about the secret room and how to open its doors unless I'm the one who tells them.

...

I went straight to my own bedroom. Remember the secret room has many doors that can lead to the other rooms in the house and also to the cave? So I went to my bedroom to open the secret door that led me to the secret room. The door only gets visible once I've scanned my eyes and blinked to open and the moment I close the door, it automatically locks and will no longer be seen from my room. I used to think that daddy was unnecessarily obsessed with technology and machines but now I can happily say "Thank you, daddy. Your obsession with technology, weird machines and codes has kept me safe."

...

I got down to business. I turned on one of the computers in the secret room and I was shocked immediately when I realized that even though the cameras in the house were destroyed, the cameras in the secret room captured everything inside the secret room, the house and everything outside our yard. How?? Are the cameras in the secret room that smart? How were they able to capture everything that happened outside the secret room and even outside our yard? Hold on, I didn't know about this. Does this mean that I will always beat The Jones at their own game when it comes to cameras? Wow, my daddy was awesomely crazy. (Giggles) You go, daddy. Now I can't wait to move to this house. Things will be much easier for me.

...

I started laughing so much. I was truly happy. I continued to go through the computer. It looks like I can even choose to turn on and off all the cameras that are controlled by the secret room. But I don't see the need to turn them off. Daddy always left them on for a reason. For privacy reasons, daddy did not allow the cameras in the secret room to capture things happening in bedrooms and bathrooms. Only a pervert would allow such, right? Should I check where Mrs Jones



is? Uhm, she must be gloating in my parents' bedroom. Actually, it's fine. I'm feeling happy so I don't want to ruin my mood by listening to Mrs Jones gloating over my family members' deaths. I won't allow the cameras in the secret room to capture what's happening in my parents' bedroom at this moment because I already know what's happening. I'm proud of my daddy and how smart he was so let me not ruin my mood.

...

I managed to see what happened to teacher's car. It was taken by his son, Aiden. I have never met Aiden before but teacher told me a lot about him and even showed me his pictures. I guess everything is okay now. Teacher must have been the one who sent Aiden to get her car. I'm happy that teacher is fine and I will send her a letter soon to tell her that I'm also okay. I'm truly happy.

...

[Teacher aka Kate]

I finally arrived at home and found Aiden cooking. My children are the best especially Aiden. Aiden knows how to always make me happy.

...

Me: Hey, my baby.

Aiden: Mom, I'm 18 years old. Can you please stop calling me that?

Me: (Smiles) I'm sorry for yelling at you earlier on.

Aiden: I'm used to it.

Me: (Giggles) Heyyy, I don't yell at you all the time.

Aiden: (Smiles) I know. Go take a shower. The food is almost ready.

Me: Where is everyone else?

Aiden: I don't know. They are probably on their way home.

Me: Okay. I will go take a shower.

Aiden: Mom, where's your car?

Me: Aiden, this again?

Aiden: I wish you could open up to me. There's nothing I wouldn't do for you or... someone close to you.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Aiden: Mom, you must learn to ask for help when it's necessary.

Me: What are you talking about?

Aiden: I... well... whatever. Go.

...

Camilla told me not to get my family members in danger. The person who killed her family members must be extremely powerful so it's best not to tell my family members anything. Aiden is stubborn and sometimes act without thinking so if I tell him everything, I know that he would definitely try to look for Camilla and even help her just to make me feel better. He would also definitely involve the cops, and I really don't want that. I can't lose my family members. I have to listen to Camilla.

...

I slowly walked away.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I was jumping up and down, full of excitement until I saw something disturbing. I sat down again and focused on the computer.

...

What's this footage about?? That's my brother and daddy. They... they are... my brother is carrying a girl who looks like May. The girl seems to be asleep but I can recognize her clearly. She really looks like May.

...

My brother and daddy headed to the secret room with that girl and my daddy was carrying a huge box. Well, I can recognize that box right away. It's a box where we can find different fake faces inside and everything needed to apply those faces so that they look extremely real. I've seen a similar box at our other house and it's used for same things. I was able to wear a fake face successfully all because of the things I found inside the box. Daddy had two boxes of such things. The other one was always kept here, in the secret room and I believe that it's the one daddy is carrying in this footage and the other one was/is kept in the other house.

...

Anyone can get it. I don't even need to watch the entire thing to see what happened. It's simple, the girl who looked like me and died with my family members last month was Maya... Maya Jones; May's twin sister; Mr and Mrs Jones' daughter.

...

I am SHOCKED. Maya Jones is really dead. I remember how she cried and said she wanted her mommy. When she was asked which other mom she wants because her mom was around, she said that "No, she's not my mommy". Daddy did not give her a chance to say everything; he shot her and acted like he was happy because he shot the real me. Oh, my goodness, Maya Jones is really dead and she was indirectly killed by her own parents.

## Chapter 10

[Some Hours Later - At The Jones House]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I finally met all the members of this family and I can tell that May hates me so much. Daniel and Oliver seem to be okay with me. Kelsy reminds me of my sister. She looks rebellious and doesn't seem to care about anything happening around her. I like her only because she reminds me of my sister but I won't be too soft and forget why I'm here.

...

May: Mom, why is she still here?

Sarah: I already said it. She's going to live with us. We are going to adopt her.

May: Why???? Why???? Why????

Mr Jones: MAY????!!!!

...

May kept quiet.

...

Kelsy: As long as this Khumo girl does not steal my boyfriends, we'll be good.

Sarah: You are just 15 years old. Is that how to talk?

Kelsy: (Giggles) I'm just being honest, mom.

...

Why would I steal her boyfriends? What is she saying? She says things that my sister would definitely say to someone if she was still alive. My sister also used to spew nonsense so I really see her in Kelsy. I truly hope that I won't become way too soft and treat Kelsy like my own sister.

...

May: There's Khumo in my class and she's black so why did you choose that name if you are not black?

Me: Anybody can have any name they want regardless of the language or race. Black people also have English names. Sometimes you find a Zulu person by the name Thabang or a Sotho person by the name Thando. Or a Tswana person by the name Buhle. Anyone can be called with any name they like. I'm not Nigerian but I can also be named Osinachi or Chidera because I like the names or because my parents like the names. It's really not a big deal and...

May: Liked.

Me: Pardon?

May: ... because your parents liked the names not like. You don't have parents anymore so don't use present tense.

Me: I was making an example that's why I used present tense.

May: Well, I don't care. I still don't like you and you should go to where your parents are. Die like them!!

...

Everyone was so shocked to what May said. Mrs Jones did not waste time. She slapped May... again.

...

I got teary eyes so I ran to my room. I sat down and cried so much. The truth is I also cried because of everything that has been hurting me. I have not been able to cry because I didn't want to mess up things in front of The Jones so now May actually helped me cry. Everyone will think that I'm only crying because of what May said.

...

Mrs Jones came rushing in my bedroom.

...

Sarah. I'm so so sorry, my dear. Please don't cry.

...

I looked at her face and cried even more. I didn't look at her as Mrs Jones but I looked at her as the one who supported her husband to get rid of my family. I wanted to tell her that I hate her but I couldn't do it. I just cried and cried. I couldn't seem to stop.

...

Sarah: I am really sorry. It won't happen again. My husband is scolding May. Please stop crying.

Me: (Yells) YOUR DAUGHTER IS VERY BAD. I AM VERY HURT!!!!

...

I ran to my bathroom and locked myself inside.

...

[The Next Day]

Mr Jones made May apologize to me but I could tell that May did not want to apologize. I pretended to be okay and "forgave" May. I really don't understand why this girl hates me so much. She met me for the first time yesterday and she already hates me without even trying to get to know me. I'm really shocked.

...

[Two Days Later]

I really want to send teacher a letter to let her know that I'm doing okay but I don't know her address. I have it but I don't know it. I didn't memorize it. What do I do?

...

I snuck out of the house and went to my family's other house. It's also not far from my family's main house. It's probably 30 minutes walk. Mr Jones, Mrs Jones and all the children are not at The Jones. Mr and Mrs Jones went to take care of some business and the children went to school. I was left at home with Aunt Letty. Letty's full name is Leticia and she's The Jones' helper and I like her a lot. She treats me very well and I only met her recently. I promise not to come for her as long as she

is also not evil. Well, sneaking out was very easy only with Aunt Letty around.

...

I arrived at my family's other house. I made sure that I was not followed by anyone. I went straight to my bedroom and looked for my school backpack. I had it on the day I was with teacher Kate so it's definitely here.

...

I found my backpack and opened it to go through my school journal. My school journal has my teacher's personal phone number and home address. She is the one who wrote the phone number and her home address herself. She really likes me so it's not a surprise that she gave me her phone number and home address. She doesn't do it with other kids. (Giggles) I guess that I'm very special to her. My mistake was not memorizing the number and address now I had to come here. Well, I'm good with memorizing so now I will always remember teacher's phone number and home address. I don't want to write them anywhere and get her in trouble.

...

I used a phone in the house to call teacher.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Voice: Hello?

...

A man? Is it her husband?

...

Me: Hello, may I please speak to teacher?

Voice: Teacher?

Me: Yes, my teacher.

Voice: Who are you?

Me: Who are you?

Voice: I'm Aiden and this is my mom's phone.

Me: Oh... Hi, Aiden. I heard a lot about you. Why is your voice so deep? Aren't you a baby?

Voice: (Giggles) What? I'm 18 years old. How can I be a baby?

Me: (Giggles) You are a baby. Listen, I really have to get going. Please give the phone to teacher.

Voice: She's taking a shower. Please leave a message.

...

I should trust Aiden but I'm sorry, I can't. I can't make mistakes.

Me: Please hold on for me. My daddy is calling me.

Voice: No problem.

Me: Don't hang up, okay?

Voice: Okay.

...

I quickly turned on the computer so that I can trace the location of the teacher's number. I just wanted to confirm that it's the same address that teacher gave to me a long time ago. If Aiden is the one who answered teacher's phone then that means teacher is at her house, right? Shouldn't Aiden even be at school right now? I heard that he's in Matric. Why is teacher also not at school, teaching?

...

I went back to the phone.

...

Me: Aiden, I trust you. It matches the address that means that you are really Aiden and you are at home.

Voice: (Laughs) Wait, did you just trace the call? Am I that untrustworthy?

Me: Sorry. I mean, you don't sound 18 years old at all so I wanted to make sure that teacher is safe.

Voice: How do you even know how to... Well, here she is. She just walked in. I'll give her the phone and go to my bedroom before she starts yelling at me again for what I did to her.

Me: I...

Teacher: Hello. Camilla is that you?

Me: (Giggles) Hello, teacher.

Teacher: Oh, Thank you, Jesus. Are you okay? Where are you? Did you eat? Are you...

Me: Teacher Kate, stop it.

Teacher: (Giggles) Sorry.

Me: I'm really okay. I found the man that daddy told me about before he died. I live with him now. I'm safe.

...

Well, I lied. Daddy was not talking about Mr Jones but I had to lie so that teacher can feel at ease.

...

Teacher: That's amazing. I am so happy.

Me: Me too. You and Aiden are at home. Why?

Teacher: Hold on, I need to tell you something.

Me: Okay. Tell me.

Teacher: This mischievous son of mine played a stupid prank on me. Do you know what he did? He is the one who keeps the spare keys of my cars so the time I left my car outside your house, Aiden happened to pass there with his friends. He took my car that same night and parked it at his friend's place just to make me panic. He only told me yesterday and returned my car and the phone. He kept quiet for the entire month and days. Who plays such a stupid prank on their parents?? I was so scared, thinking that those bad people discovered my car and are coming after me. Aiden is grounded but now he's home early because it's sports day at his school today.

Me: Wow. He's truly mischievous. Well... Teacher, I know that what Aiden did was very stupid and left you scared for so long but now that everything is okay, please forgive him. Think about it, if it wasn't for Aiden's stupid prank, your car would've been discovered by those bad people. Trust me on this one. Those people are cunning. Your car being exactly outside the gate would have raised suspicions. Those people were going to make sure that they find you. So at this point I am happy that Aiden is a big fool. He really helped us. Think about it.

...

Teacher kept quiet.

...

Me: Teacher?



Teacher: You are right. I didn't about it that way plus I only went back for the car two days after we left the cave.

Me: And that's four days after everything that happened. Do you remember that we spent two days in the cave?

Teacher: Yes, you are absolutely right. It would have been late.

Me: Plus one of those men believed that he saw a woman through a window. He would've definitely figured everything out if your car was still there after everything that happened.

Teacher: Yes, that's right. Thank you, Camilla. I will forgive Aiden.

Me: That would be really nice. So why are you home?

Teacher: I resigned. I don't want to teach at that school without you being my learner.

Me: (Giggles) You are crazy, teacher.

Teacher: (Laughs) I will find another school, don't worry.

Me: Okay. I have to go. This number will disappear from your call records the moment I hang up. I will be the one to always call you, is that okay?

Teacher: (Giggles) You are so secretive but I don't blame you. I will always wait for your call.

Me: Okay. Bye.

Teacher: Bye, my dear. Take care.

Me: Mhmm. You too.

...

I hung up and got ready to leave. As much as I would like to take some things from this house to help me with my revenge, I can't do that until we move to my family's main house. Let it all begin. They won't see me coming. I will avenge my family members' deaths even if it takes me years. Now all I have to do is start planning and I must make sure that my plan does not have any mistakes. Everything should be perfect.

...

[Three Weeks Later]

I'm so excited. I don't know how Mr Jones did it but he finally got everything sorted for me. My name is Khumo Jones and I'm finally going to school today.

...

May fights with me at every given chance but I still ignore her because I know that I'll definitely deal with her when we move to my family's main house. We are moving in few days from now. The Jones will never know my family's main house like me. They probably don't even know that there are other rooms that exists in that house and they definitely don't know anything about the secret room.

...

I arrived at school and I was taken to my class by the principal and my mom and by my mom, I mean Mrs Jones. She wanted me to start calling her mom immediately after she adopted me so I started practicing it until I got used to it.

...

I was shocked when I walked in the classroom and saw teacher Kate. I wanted to smile and hug her but I controlled myself.

...

What?? Teacher Kate?? Here?? I'm so happy to see her. At least I'll get to see her every Monday to Friday.

...

To be continued...

From Chapter 20, old Camilla aka Khumo will be back. Chapter 20 will be a continuation of Chapter 1. So make sure that you don't miss even the smallest details from Chapter 2 to Chapter 19. My stories are always full of twists and flashbacks. If you remember Chapter 1 very well, Khumo was very cold and even knew how to use a gun. She was completely different from the young Khumo. Yes, the young Khumo is smart but she is still soft. Don't miss the day that young Khumo becomes extremely heartless. Something will definitely trigger her to stop being soft. Yes, young Khumo is still going to go through so much pain until she finally decide to be like Khumo in Chapter 1.

## Chapter 11

[Let us finally meet young Thato - The same Thato that was mentioned in Chapter 1. Do you all remember how she said her surname is Modise in Chapter 1? Well, her surname is not Modise yet. But how? We will find out.]

...

[Break Time - At School]

[Thato]

Wow, Khumo's eyes are so beautiful. They are green. She's so beautiful. I want her to be my friend. I just like her.

...

I went to Khumo and sat down next to her.

...

Me: (Smiles) Hello, friend.

Khumo: Who's your friend?

Me: You.

Khumo: I don't know you.

Me: My name is Thato... Thato Moraka. What's your name?

Khumo: I was introduced by the principal when I came to this class, remember?

Me: (Smiles) Khumo Jones.

Khumo: You are so annoying. You knew my name but still asked me. Are you normal?

Me: You look sad. What is wrong?

Khumo: I am sad because of you. You are annoying. I don't like you. Leave me alone.

Me: I want to be your friend.

Khumo: I don't want friends.

...

She got up and left the class. Why is she so cold? Well, I won't stop liking her.

...

[Teacher aka Kate]

Wow, the little girl I met in the ladies room at the mall weeks ago joined my class today. I've been teaching in this school for a week now and I

wasn't expecting to see her. She speaks a little like Camilla or... am I missing Camilla that much to a point where I feel like Khumo speaks a little like her? Well, Khumo is very cold towards other children. She reminds me of Camilla but Camilla was always bubbly and not cold like Khumo. Well, Camilla still calls me whenever she wants to so I'm still happy that everything is okay with her. But... but why am I now drawn to Khumo the way I am drawn to Camilla? I'm weird.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I didn't know that teacher is now working at this school. I call her whenever I get the chance and she told me that she found a job but I didn't ask her the name of the school.

...

Thato?? Wow, I wish I could be her friend. I like her but I have to push her away. I have to pretend to be cold so that nobody gets close to me. If I want everything to go my way, the first thing I have to do is make sure that I don't become close to anyone. I need to be cold. Thato is annoying but I don't think that she's a bad person.

...

[Later That Day]

The driver dropped me off at home and left. I found a strange man in the house. Well, Aunt Letty was also around.

...

Me: Who are you?

Letty: (Smiles) Hey, dear. This is Johnny. He's your dad's cousin.

...

My dad's cousin? How?

...

Letty: He's Mr Jone's cousin. Greet him.

...

Oh, yeah... that dad. I was lost for a moment.

...

Me: (Smiles) Hello, Uncle Johnny.

Johnny: (Smiles) Hello, beautiful. I heard a lot about you. Khumo, right?

Me: Yes, sir.

Johnny: Well, I can tell that you and I will get along really well.

Me: (Smiles) That's good.

Letty: Khumo, how was your first day at school?

Me: (Smiles) It was really nice. I had fun.

Letty: (Smiles) You look so good. I'll go to the kitchen to prepare your food.

Me: Okay. The teacher gave me so many notes. I am behind because I only started going to school today. I'm going to change my clothes and study.

Letty: No problem. I'll bring your food to you.

Me: Where's everyone else?

Letty: They are not around. The children must be on their way home.

Me: Okay.

...

I went to my bedroom. Uncle Johnny followed me.

...

For some reason, I don't trust him. I don't even like the way he looks at me. He makes me feel very uncomfortable.

...

Johnny: Hello, beautiful.

Me: Do you need something?

He came closer to me. His eyes were literally scanning me from head to toe.

...

Johnny: I also like school skirts.

...

I took steps backwards.

...

Me: Pardon?

Johnny: You look absolutely amazing. It makes me excited.

...

What is he? A pervert? I must watch out for this one. He's acting like the way those men acted when they... when they... when they... when they did what they did to my mom and sisters right in front of my daddy.

...

Me: Uncle Johnny, I have so much school work to do. Please leave my bedroom.

Johnny: Well, I really like you. Go ahead and take off your school uniform.

Me: Right in front of you?

Johnny: What's wrong with that? Are you not like my baby?

Me: I...

...

Aunt Letty immediately barged in. She looked like somebody who came running to my bedroom.

...

Letty: Johnny, your phone is ringing. I brought it to you.

Johnny: Thank you.

...

Uncle Johnny took his phone from Aunt Letty and left my bedroom. I felt relieved.

...

Me: (Sighs) Aunt Letty, where's my food?

Letty: Sorry. I'm not yet done. I had to bring the phone to him. Always lock the door when you are alone in your bedroom, okay?

Me: I...

Letty: I will go back to the kitchen now. Don't forget to lock the door. I'll knock when I bring the food.

...

She left. I locked the door immediately.

...

I'm not stupid. I understood what Aunt Letty was trying to tell me. She came running to my bedroom for me. It had nothing to do with Uncle Johnny's phone ringing. The phone was just an excuse for Aunt Letty to get Uncle Johnny out of my bedroom. Did that man really tell me to take off my school uniform in front of him because I'm like his baby?

What????? Real fathers are not even like that. My daddy never said such things to me. Does that man see a fool when looking at me? I must really watch out for him. I have a bad feeling about him.

...

[Later That Day]

Mr and Mrs Jones came home. They were arguing. Mrs Jones was in tears.

...

Couldn't they take this to their bedroom? Do they always argue in front of their children?

...

Daniel: Mom and dad, what's wrong?

Mr Jones: Ask your mother. I'm so mad at her for what she said.

...

I wanted to walk away. I'm not used to a situation like this. It makes me feel uncomfortable. My parents never fought in front of me and my siblings.

...

Kelsy: Mom, what did you say?

Oliver: Mom, stop crying and tell us everything.

Sarah: I simply asked Dean to make funeral arrangements and he got mad at me.

Kelsy: Funeral arrangements?

Sarah: Yes, for Maya. We still can't find her. She is obviously not alive.

Daniel: (Yells) MOM, HOW DARE YOU???? MAYA IS ALIVE.  
HAVE YOU SEEN HER DEAD BODY??

...

Everyone started yelling at Mrs Jones.

...

Wow, what a family of clowns. Is this how people should act? They are all talking at once. Is this how children should also talk to their own mother? Is this how a husband should talk to his own wife in front of his children? What a joke. They should just listen to Mrs Jones. A mother knows best. Maya is really dead.

...

Me: (Shouts) STOP IT. STOP IT!!!!

...

They all stopped yelling at Mrs Jones and looked at me. I spoke calmly.

...

Me: It's enough. Mom made a mistake. Don't yell at her like that. Please forgive her.

May: Who are you to get involved in our family matter?

Me: I am also a member of this family, May. Right, dad?

Mr Jones: Yes, of course. I'm sorry for everything. We must have scared you but Sarah is wrong. My daughter is still alive. I know that my daughter is alive. Who would kill her? Nobody can touch my family members. Maya is alive.

Me: Yes, dad. Maya is alive. I also believe that she's alive. She will be found very soon. Please don't get mad at mom.

Mr Jones: Fine.

...

He walked away. Uncle Johnny followed him.

## Chapter 12

[Two Months Later]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

We have been living in my family's main house and I obviously chose my own bedroom. May wanted to fight with me for my bedroom but there was no way I was going to give up my bedroom for her. She ended up choosing another bedroom. Uncle Johnny went to Mexico 3 days before we moved to my family's main house and I couldn't be happier but now I heard that he's coming back with his entire family members to live with us. There's something I realized before Uncle Johnny went to Mexico. He is actually secretly abusing Aunt Letty. He was also mad at Aunt Letty for saving me on that particular day when he wanted me to take off my school uniform in front of him.

...

Well, I stopped going to my family's other house a week after we moved to my family's main house. I had to stop going there just to be extra careful. I got everything I needed from the other house including the poisonous needles I always wanted to take with me. I have everything I need, all in the secret room. The Jones are actually using my family



members' cards. I really blame the security guard. He's obviously the one who let murderers into our home and I will not spare him at all.

...

Aunt Letty came to my room.

...

Letty: (Smiles) Dear, do you need anything?

Me: No, thank you.

Letty: You seem to love this bedroom a lot.

Me: (Smiles) Yes, I do.

Letty: (Smiles) It suits you. Well, I'm going to the shops. I'll see you later.

Me: Why do you also work on Saturdays? Shouldn't you be with your family members today?

Letty: (Smiles) My family is doing fine. I love my job. The Jones treat me well.

Me: Do they really treat you well?

Letty: Yes, they do.

Me: What about Uncle Johnny?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Nobody knows that he is abusing you, right? He is...

Letty: Dear, I am getting late. See you later.

Me: But I...

...

She rushed out of my bedroom. What is wrong with her? Why is she allowing Uncle Johnny to treat her bad? What's her story? I am really curious.

...

May barged in my room 30 minutes after Aunt Letty left the house.

...

Me: What do you want?

May: Khumo, I don't like you.

Me: Why? What have I done to you?

May: You are a horrible person. You took my parents away from me.

Me: That's not true.

May: Guess what? Uncle Johnny is coming with his family members soon and I will get partners who will help me bully you.

...

I kept quiet.

...

May: (Laughs) Are you scared now?

Me: Do you enjoy hurting others?

May: Yes, I do and I will get help from Sofia and Arabella.

Me: Okay.

May: Okay? Is that all you want to say?

Me: What do you want me to say, May?

...

She came closer to me and pulled my hair. I was really getting angry but I had to act okay.

...

Me: May, you are hurting me.

May: (Laughs) I don't care. Mom and dad are not home. They will only come back home after two days. No one will help you.

...

Hold on. She's right. Mr and Mrs Jones are not home. This is my chance to stand up for myself.

...

I pushed May away and she fell down. And just like that, she started crying.

...

May: Why did you hit me? Why did you hit me?

Me: I didn't...

...

May's brother, Oliver walked in and immediately slapped me. I fell and got hurt.

Oliver: We tolerate you because of our parents. We all don't like you at all. How dare you hit my little sister?

Me: I didn't hit her. Why did you hit me for no reason?

...

Daniel and Kelsy also walked in. They were laughing. I understood everything immediately when Daniel and Kelsy walked in. It was planned. May came to my bedroom to provoke me so that I can act and be bullied by all the siblings. I really thought that Oliver, Daniel and Kelsy were okay with me but I guess I was wrong. They all hate me for no reason.

...

I was truly hurt because Oliver slapped me and I fell but all these siblings started beating me up for no reason. I wasn't crying and I wasn't planning to cry. I just let them beat me up.

...

They finally stopped and started laughing at me. And that day... that day started playing in my head over and over again. I started remembering how those men treated my family members and laughed. I felt like I was going mad. I got so angry and walked out of the house. I arrived at this other park and Thato happened to be there.

...

Thato: Khumo, hi. What's wrong with you? Your nose is bleeding. Why are you limping? Why are...

Me: You talk too much.

...

Well, those baboons came for my face. They kept slapping my face and hit me on my back. With the fake face on, I didn't feel the pain on my face but yes, my nose is bleeding... my head also hurts. There's a real face underneath this fake face so I guess it's normal plus my hair was also pulled. My hair is real and connected to my real head so yes, I got hurt.

...

Thato: Do you live around?

Me: Shut up.

Thato: Who hurt you? Should I call my dad and...

Me: Thuto, I'm fine.

Thato: (Giggles) It's Thato.

...

She wiped my blood with her dress.

...

Me: Thank you.

Thato: (Smiles) Did you just say Thank you? You have never been nice to others and...

Me: You are annoying.

Thato: (Smiles) You are beautiful.

Me: (Smiles) You are also beautiful.

...

Oh, no. What is wrong with me? I was not supposed to smile and say that.

...

Thato: (Giggles) Thank you. Are you pretending to be cold?

Me: Get away from me. I don't like you.

Thato: (Smiles) Mhmm.

Me: Mhmm?? What's the meaning of that?

Thato: (Sings) Khumo Jones is beautiful. She is beautiful but very sad.

...

I began to walk away. She came after me and hugged me from behind.

My back was in so much pain, I couldn't help but whimper. She immediately ran to some lady and came back to me with that lady.

...

Thato: Aunty Lydia, Aunty Lydia, she's in pain. Please help her. She's my friend.

Lydia: Oh goodness, she doesn't look good at all. I'll call your dad to come here.

...

NO!!!! I don't want many people to get involved with me. I can't let her call Thato's father.

...

Me: No, aunt. I'm fine.

Lydia: Who beat you up? You are not in a good condition. Your nose can't even stop bleeding. You are losing so much blood.

Me: I...

Lydia: I'll take you to the hospital. Thato, you can come play here tomorrow. I'll come with you. I'm sorry.

Thato: Why are you sorry? I don't want to play. We should help my friend first.

Lydia: (Smiles) You are a good girl. Okay, let's go to the car.

Thato: Are you not going to call dad to come help us?

Lydia: We are running out of time. We can't wait for your dad. Your friend is in serious need of help. We have to rush her to the hospital.

Thato: (Cries) Okay... but will she die?

Lydia: No, no, dear. She will be fine.

Me: Did you really bring a car to the park? Who... who does that? Do you not live around here? Are you that lazy to...

...

And just like that, I fainted.

## Chapter 13

[Later That Day]

[Mr Jones]

We arrived home earlier than planned because Letty called us and told us that Khumo was nowhere to be found.

...

I could tell that my children were scared immediately when we walked in.

...

Me: What's going on? Where's Khumo?

Letty: Mr Jones, we don't know.

Sarah: We had to stop everything we were doing to come back. What happened?

Letty: Khumo was home when I went to the shops. She was nowhere to be seen when I came back.

Me: Daniel?? Oliver??

...

They looked down. I slapped them.

...

Kelsy: Dad, please forgive us. We didn't mean to...

May: Dad, we don't know where Khumo is and it's okay that she's gone.

Me: Kelsy wanted to say something and you stopped her. Why?

May: I...

Me: Sarah, talk to your children before I lose it.

...

I went to check the footage of today and it was deleted.

...

My children did something to Khumo that's why they look scared and that's why they deleted the footage. I thought that they liked Khumo, what's wrong with them?

...

I went back to them and took out my belt.

...

Me: If you don't speak up now, you will regret it.

May: Dad, please forgive us. We had an argument with Khumo and she left the house.

Me: Are you telling the truth?

May: Yes, I am.

Sarah: She's lying. They must have hurt her. Khumo would not just up and leave. Look at the time. It's 23:00 and Khumo is still not back.

Me: I will not forgive any of you if something happens to Khumo.

...

I walked away to make some calls.

...

What if the person who took Maya also took Khumo? For the first time in my life, I'm very scared. I can't lose Khumo like Maya.

...

[Two Days Later]

We still have not found Khumo yet and my wife would not stop crying. For the first time in my life, I starved my children yesterday after hitting them.

...

Johnny and his family members arrived today and the atmosphere is still not nice in the house at the moment. Johnny and his family are going to live with us for some time. Johnny's house is getting renovated that's why he's here with his family members.

...

[Later That Day]

I was in the garden when Johnny walked in.

...

Johnny: I heard what you did to your children all because of Khumo. What has happened to you?

Me: Please leave me alone if you are not here to say anything that makes sense.

Johnny: How come you are not able to find Khumo?

Me: I don't know.

Johnny: Don't worry. You'll find her soon.

Me: I hope that she is fine wherever she is.

Johnny: I hope so too but don't starve your children.

Me: I only starved them yesterday but they ate today.

Johnny: I know but don't do it again.

...

I began crying. The emotions were too much.

...

Johnny: Hey, it's okay. Khumo will be fine. She's very smart.

Me: Do you also think that Maya passed away?

Johnny: I... I don't know but I want you to be positive.

Me: I can't lose two children all at once. That would kill me. You know that family means everything to me.

Johnny: I know that's why I was shocked when I heard that you punished your children for Khumo.

Me: Johnny, Khumo is also part of my family. Don't you get it?

Johnny: I do. I am sorry man, everything will be fine.

Me: Khumo's school would not stop calling us. What do I say?

Johnny: Just tell them that Khumo is sick.

Me: What if Khumo does not come back to us just like Maya?

Johnny: Be hopeful, please. You have to be strong so that you can properly look for her and find her.

...

I wiped away my tears and walked away.

...

[Johnny]

My goodness, I didn't realize that Sarah and Dean love Khumo this much. I guess I should stop thinking about whatever I wanted to do to Khumo. I don't want to end up getting killed by Dean. He truly takes Khumo as part of the family so I should behave around Khumo. I know that family means everything to Dean just like family means everything to me. I have not seen Dean cry until today. He must really be sad. I feel for him.

...

[A Week Later]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I always run away from people so today I decided to run away from the hospital the moment I felt okay. I am sure that The Jones are looking for me so I didn't want them to end up finding me at the hospital and finding out about the people who helped me so I ran away from the hospital when no one saw me.

...

I was walking when a car pulled over next to the road. To be honest, I didn't know where I was. I was about to run away when Mr Jones got out of the car. Wait, that's my daddy's car. Mr Jones, you have gone too far. How dare you????

...

He ran to me and hugged me.



...

Mr Jones: We were so worried about you. What happened to you? Why did you run away from home? Couldn't you tell me that you were bullied instead of running away??

...

I am genuinely done being nice to people who are not nice to me. I will not rest until I've turned Mr and Mrs Jones against their own children.

...

I started crying and pushed Mr Jones away.

...

Me: Are you seriously asking me why I ran away from home?

Mr Jones: Did May and the others hurt you?

Me: Yes. They beat me up. I left the house angry then fainted at the park. Some good people sent me to the hospital but couldn't call you because I was unconscious until yesterday. I was discharged today and decided to go home but I got lost.

Mr Jones: I am so sorry. Were you hospitalized all this time?

...

I nodded. He wiped away my tears and kissed my forehead.

...

Mr Jones: I am truly sorry.

Me: It's okay, dad but you didn't hurt me so don't apologize.

Mr Jones: I will make them apologize to you.

Me: Would you be mad at me if I were to leave your family? I had told you that other families never treated me right so I always ran away. I never thought that I would go through the same thing under your care. You have failed me.

...

He started crying.

...

Wait, why is he crying? Are these fake tears? Does he really like me? What's going on?

...

Me: Why are you crying?

Mr Jones: I don't want to lose you. You are my daughter and I love you so much. You are now part of us.

Me: I need to be treated well or else I will leave.

Mr Jones: Okay, I understand you. I will do better. No one will ever hurt you again.

Me: Do you promise?

Mr Jones: Yes, I do. You are the perfect daughter so I want you to always be happy.

...

Somebody please tell Mr Jones that he'll get hurt at the end. I feel like laughing at him. Does he really love me? I mean, his eyes are not lying. He looks like he's being genuine right now. Well, talk about things going my way. Yes, I've been hurt so much and even got bullied by Mr Jones' baboons but I am Camilla Modise Khumo Jones so I will keep getting up no matter what. If I can live in a house where I lost my family members and even get reminded of that horrible day every single day, getting a beating from baboons can never break me and trust me, next time I will fight back. Oliver, Daniel and Kelsy are older than me and I can never be able to beat them up but I can surely teach them a lesson without even touching them. I have everything I need in the secret room. When daddy mentioned the code 103500 before dying, he was telling me about the weapons I can use for my revenge. Did May say that she'll bully me with Uncle Johnny's children? I swear to God, I will retaliate because now I can tell that Mr Jones favors me a lot. I won't let anybody bully me anymore. I will stand my ground because now I am very sure that Mr Jones has my back. When it comes to Mrs Jones, it's not even questionable. She obviously has my back. These people really take me as their real child so why not take advantage of that?? I will turn their lives upside down. The first person I will deal with is Uncle Johnny and I will deal with him tonight. He is a pervert and he's also abusive to Aunt Letty. I will turn Mr Jones against him without making it obvious

## Chapter 14

[Mrs Jones]

My husband arrived with Khumo and I was so happy. I returned home a while ago. I was also out there searching for Khumo.

I ran to Khumo and hugged her.

...

Me: My baby, how are you? Where were you?

Khumo: (Smiles) Mom, you like crying, don't you?

Me: Will you really tease me at a time like this?

Khumo: (Smiles) I want to go to school. It's Monday.

Me: Khumo, my baby. It's almost school out. You'll go tomorrow.

Khumo: I did not go to school the entire week last week because I was hospitalized so I must be behind with school work. I want to...

Me: Hospitalized?

...

She kept quiet. I looked at my husband.

...

Me: Dear, what's going on?

...

My husband started telling me everything that Khumo told him. I was lost for words. How can my own children treat my other child like this?

They have gone too far.

...

Me: I'm so mad at them.

Khumo: Forget about it for now. Where's everyone else?

Me: The children went to school.

Khumo: And where's Aunt Letty? Where's Uncle Johnny and his family? They must have already arrived, right?

Me: Letty is off today. Johnny and his wife went to work. The children went to school.

Mr Jones: I'll go prepare food for Khumo.

Me: You? Really?

Mr Jones: Yes, me.

Me: Do you know your way to the kitchen?

Mr Jones: Hey, why do you sound like I never cook for you?

Me: The last time you cooked for me was last year so I thought that maybe you forgot how the kitchen looks like.

...

He laughed and walked away. I sat down with Khumo.

...

Khumo: Mom, are Uncle Johnny's children going to live in South Africa forever? Is that why they started a new school?

Me: (Smiles) Johnny and his family always lived in SA. They lived in the neighboring suburb so his children did not start a new school.

Khumo: Are you serious? I thought that Uncle Johnny and his family members lived in Mexico.

Me: Where did you get that?

Khumo: Isn't that the reason why Uncle Johnny went to Mexico? Did he not go there to bring his family to SA?

Me: No. He was in Mexico for some business. He was alone. He was not with his family members.

Khumo: Mhmm, I see.

Me: Does your back still hurt?

Khumo: No. I'm completely fine now.

Me: I'm truly sorry for what happened to you. You deserve to be happy. We left you with the others because we thought that they loved you. I'm really sorry, my baby.

Khumo: (Smiles) It's okay. Would you get mad at me if I decide to fight back next time?

Me: Of course not. I don't want you to keep quiet when you are bullied. You must always stand your ground.

Khumo: Okay, mom. Sorry for worrying you.

Me: What matters is that you are now home and you are safe.

Khumo: (Smiles) And I'll get to go to school tomorrow.

Me: (Laughs) Do you love school that much?

Khumo: Yes, I do.

Me: (Smiles) You are my perfect and intelligent child.

Khumo: (Giggles) Nobody is perfect.

Me: Whose clothes are you wearing? I don't recognize them.

Khumo: The people who took me to the hospital took good care of me. They bought toiletries and clothes for me. I left the toiletries in the hospital bathroom after taking a shower in the morning.

Me: I need to find the people who helped you. They really helped us a lot.

Khumo: Don't find them. They don't want to be found. They just wanted to help me. I also don't know them. I don't even know the hospital they took me to.

Me: Didn't you read?

Khumo: I didn't care about any other thing. I just wanted to come home and see your pretty face.

Me: (Smiles) You are so sweet. I love you so much.

...

She smiled at me and kissed my cheek. God, thank you so much for keeping my baby girl safe.

...

[Later That Day - At The Dinner Table]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I met Uncle Johnny's family members during the day. Well, Mr and Mrs Jones made their baboons apologize to me when they came back from school but the truth is I am not able to forget how they laughed at me. Laughing at me reminded me of a day I lost my family members and it also reminded me of everything that I witnessed on that day. I could still hear the laughter and I hate it. These baboons will have to pay but firstly I want to focus on Uncle Johnny. I had said that I will teach him a lesson tonight and trust me, I won't back down.

...

Uncle Johnny is truly a pervert. He kept putting his hand on me, under the table no matter how many times I pushed it away. Well, he will soon be in so much pain. When I brought the glasses from the kitchen with Kelsy, I applied a liquid poison on the glass; exactly where Uncle Johnny is going to drink from and also inside the glass. The poison could kill him if he doesn't get the antidote in the next two hours so I will give him the antidote once I am satisfied. The poison will make him

feel like his internal organs are being cut off slowly. He will regret messing with me and this is just the beginning.

...

Nobody will actually know that I'm the one who did something to Uncle Johnny. I don't even need to mess up with the footage. This is how the poison I used work... I was in the secret room and applied the liquid poison to my hands just like how a lotion is applied on hands. The poison only gets to work when mixed with another liquid thing. So when Kelsy was rinsing the glasses in the kitchen, I only helped her with one glass then immediately washed my hands with soap before the poison damage my hands. I carried some of the glasses that was rinsed by Kelsy and the one I rinsed. The glasses were only rinsed and not wiped so poison plus the water in Uncle Johnny's glass is equals disaster.

...

[After Eating]

I went to my bedroom. I was getting ready to go to my bathroom to take a shower when I heard someone screaming. It was obviously Uncle Johnny screaming. Because I didn't want anyone to see me as someone who doesn't care, I had to rush back to the dining room. My bedroom is not far from the dining room that we used tonight that's why I was able to hear Uncle Johnny screaming. Everyone was panicking because Uncle Johnny was now spitting blood.

...

Wait, is his immune system that weak? He was not supposed to be bleeding already. (Laughs) Well, who cares? He won't be getting an antidote until I am satisfied. They may even call 100 doctors but nobody can heal him other than me. I didn't buy that poison, it was made so of course I'm the only one with an antidote. Well, let's now act.

...

Me: Oh, my goodness!! What happened to him? What happened to him?

May: IT'S YOUR BAD LUCK. YOU ARE A JINX.

Me: May, why are you doing this at a time like this?

May: I HATE YOU. I HATE YOU!!

Me: Just keep quiet. I'm worried about Uncle Johnny. I don't have time for you.

May: STAY AWAY. THIS IS A FAMILY MATTER!!!!

Me: Why are you always yelling? Can't you speak like a normal person?

May: I AM SURE THAT YOUR PARENTS DIED BECAUSE OF YOU. THEY DESERVED TO DIE FOR HAVING A CHILD LIKE YOU. I...

...

I slapped her and she fell. Everyone was paying attention to Uncle Johnny so they didn't care about May.

...

Why is she always saying such horrible things to me? I was not planning to do anything to her until she said that my parents deserved to die. I was really going to only focus on Uncle Johnny tonight but now May pushed me. I grabbed her by the hand and led her to my bedroom. I closed my bedroom door, locked it and beat her up.

...

[The Next Day - At School]

[Thato]

I'm so happy to see Khumo. She left the hospital yesterday without saying a word to anyone but she looks really okay now so I am happy.

...

I went to her and sat down next to her.

...

Me: (Smiles) Good morning.

Khumo: Mhmm.

Me: Are you okay now?

Khumo: Mhmm.

Me: I promised you not to tell the teacher about what happened to you. I didn't say anything to anyone.

Khumo: Thanks.

Me: (Smiles) Let's go to class.

Khumo: Thuto, stop following me around.

Me: I am Thato not Thuto. Thato means Will... like The Will of God and Thuto means Education so how are you making such a mistake?

Well, I will forgive you since you are not Black or Tswana like me.

Khumo: (Laughs) Nice.

Me: Why are you laughing? Hold on, why is your name Khumo? You are not Black.

Khumo: Oh no, not this again. Thuto, stop following me.

Me: Well, I won't stop following you around.

Khumo: I will hit you.

Me: I don't care.

Khumo: You are so annoying.

Me: (Giggles) I know. Come, I'll show you my school work. You didn't miss a lot. You missed only few homework. It was sports week last week so we were always at the field.

Khumo: Oh, I see. That's good.

Me: What sport do you like?

Khumo: Taekwondo.

Me: Isn't Taekwondo martial arts?

Khumo: It is but it can also be a sport just like karate and wrestling.

Me: Oh, you are right. Do you go to Taekwondo classes?

Khumo: Yes, I do. There was a month when I wasn't going to classes due to personal reasons but now I attend classes again.

Me: Wow, that's nice. Do you like fighting?

Khumo: I don't like fighting but I will like fighting and hurting others.

Me: What do you mean?

Khumo: Didn't you want to show me the work I missed?

Me: Yeah. Let's go. From now on, I will sit with you. The teacher allowed me to sit next to you.

...

She rolled her eyes and headed to class. I followed her.

...

Khumo reminds me of my dad. Her presence is felt whenever she walks in or passes by. She's just 8 years old but her presence screams power. She walks with so much attitude and she's very beautiful. (Giggles) I reeeeeeeally like her a lot.

...

[In Class]

Teacher: Thato Moraka, go to your seat.

...



I ignored her.

...

Teacher: Thato Moraka?

Me: Yes, teacher?

Teacher: Go to your seat.

Me: Teacher, didn't you tell me that I can sit next to Khumo and show her the work she missed when she was sick?

Teacher: Wh... what? When did I say that?

...

I just looked at her and smiled.

...

Teacher: Okay, okay, fine. You can sit there.

Me: (Smiles) Everyday?

Teacher: Yes, Thato. Everyday.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, teacher.

...

Khumo looked at me.

...

Khumo: You lied to me when we were outside.

Me: I know.

Khumo: You are too much.

Me: Do you see how I always get what I want? I will also get you.

Khumo: You wish.

Me: You will see. I am...

Teacher: Thato, please keep quiet. I want to teach.

Me: (Smiles) Sorry, teacher.

...

I smiled at Khumo and winked. She rolled her eyes.

## Chapter 15

[Later That Day]

[May]

I arrived at home with Uncle Johnny's daughters, Sofia and Arabella.

We found Khumo watching TV.

...

Me: Hello, Bully.

...

She ignored me.

...

Arabella: Hey, loser. Can't you hear that May is talking to you?

...

Khumo still kept quiet.

...

Arabella: Nobody is home. You got away with hitting May last night because my dad was in pain so now we will teach you a lesson for hurting our May.

Me: (Laughs) I didn't tell the elders what you did to me because I wanted to secretly deal with you. Are you scared now?

Sofia: May and Arabella. Please leave Khumo alone. Why are you bullying her?

Me: Sofia, what did you say?

Sofia: You heard me. Stop being bullies.

Arabella: You are supposed to side with us, Sofia. What is wrong with you?

Me: I thought that you'd help us teach Khumo a lesson.

Sofia: I heard the things you said to Khumo last night. She slapped you because of what you said.

Me: She didn't just slap me. She beat me up when she forced me to her bedroom. She locked the door and beat me up.

Sofia: You had provoked her that's why she acted. Personally, I think that Khumo is nice so...

Me: Hey, I...

...

Aunt Letty walked in.

...

Letty: Food is ready, everyone. Please go change your clothes and wash your hands.

Me: Leticia, you are so annoying. You are also a loser just like Khumo.

Khumo: Hey, watch how you speak to her. She's older than you. She's older than mom, do you know that?

Me: Oh, can you now speak?

Khumo: I am warning you, girl. You can say anything you want to me but I won't tolerate it if you are disrespectful to Aunt Letty.

Letty: (Smiles) Khumo, my dear. It's okay. Let's...

...

I stepped on Aunt Letty's feet and laughed. Khumo got up and pushed me. I fell down.

...

What is wrong with me? Why do I always fall when she pushes me? I hate this. It's embarrassing.

...

Arabella attempted to slap Khumo but Khumo held her hand and slapped her.

...

Khumo: I am not scared of you, Arabella and May. Stop it already because next time I'll really hurt you.

...

She pushed Arabella and Arabella also fell.

...

Khumo: This was my last warning. Stop bothering me and stop being disrespectful to Aunt Letty.

...

She looked at Sofia.

...

Khumo: It's good that you know what's right and wrong. I won't do anything to you but if you ever decide to side with their nonsense, I will also deal with you the same way I dealt with them.

...

She held Aunt Letty's hand and went to her bedroom with her.

...

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I was winning in ignoring those girls until May started disrespecting Aunt Letty and laughed. Laughter?? Really?? I hate it so much when somebody does something wrong and laugh. It triggers me; it provokes me so much; it provokes the devil in me. I hate it so much because it reminds me of that horrible day.

...

I was really fuming.

...

Letty: Dear, you really didn't have to be against them for me.

Me: Why? Why would you let children treat you like that? What is wrong with you?

Letty: (Smiles) Thank you so much for being so nice but they won't forget what you did. They will always trouble you.

Me: Are you trying to say that I should've just stayed out of it?

Letty: Yes. I'm used to it. It's okay and...

Me: What did you say? How can you get used to something like that? I will go back and really beat them up.

...

I attempted to go back but I was stopped by her. I stopped because she was kneeling before me. I felt like I was losing it. Tears streamed down my face. I was truly hurt.

...

Me: Why would you do that? Why would you kneel down before me?

Letty: (Cries) Please, dear. I know that you mean well but if you keep fighting with May and Arabella for me, I will lose everything.

Me: Please get up. You are hurting me. No elder should ever kneel down before a child. Stop it.

Letty: I am sorry but please don't go back.

Me: Fine. Please get up.

...

I helped her get up.

Me: What's really going on?

Letty: It's best if you don't know some things. I want you to always be happy. You are a good kid.

Me: You may go. I am going to the bathroom.

Letty: Okay.

...

She wiped away her tears and left my bedroom. I was so hurt.

...

I genuinely can't stand it when other people are bullied for nothing and I also can't stand it when a nice elder like Aunt Letty is disrespected. I am so hurt and she also broke me when she knelt down before me. What makes me more sad is the fact that there is something that she's going through and she's not able to disclose it. How will I be able to help her when she doesn't tell me anything? Camilla Modise-Khumo Jones, you need to grow up faster and be able to help the ones that you want to help.

...

I wish I knew where to find my daddy's brother, Uncle Martin. He sold his house a week before my family members were killed so me and my family members never got the chance to go to his new house, if ever he bought a new house. Uncle Martin is the person that daddy told me to trust but I also don't want to find him because I don't want to lose him like the way I lost my family members. Well, I know for sure that Uncle Martin will never find me. I made sure of that and that's the other reason why I stopped going to my family's other house. Does Uncle Martin even know that my family members are dead? Well, if he does, he obviously believe that I also died. I mean, people believe that Camilla Modise died with her family members so Uncle Martin will never find me. I want to look for him but at the same time I don't want to do that.

...

[Thato]

I arrived at home and I was shocked to see my dad, Martin. My dad is always in and out of the country. He had left SA last week Monday so I'm shocked to see him.

...

Me: Dad, why are you back so soon?

Martin: Are you not happy to see me?

Me: (Smiles) I am happy. Did mom allow you to change my surname to Modise?

Martin: Your mom is stubborn. She wants you to be Thato Moraka forever.

Me: But I don't want mom's surname. She's a bad mom and she's also not nice to you.

Martin: Who's teaching you that? Stay out of this.

Me: I don't need to be taught what's right and what's wrong. Mom is wrong and I know it.

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Can't you just change my surname?

Martin: I can't. Your mom is... Just let it go.

Me: No, dad. She separated us for so many years. Why should I still use her surname?

...

He came closer to me and kissed my forehead.

...

Martin: Things will change one day. I promise you.

Me: Will they?

Martin: Mhmm, they will. Is your friend okay?

Me. Yes, she's fine. She even came to school today.

Martin: That's good.

Me: Did you find the person you were looking for?

...

He shook his head.

...

Me: Who exactly are you looking for?

Martin: I told you not to get involved.

Me: What if I know the person you are looking for? You never know.

Martin: How would you know her? You lived with your mom in UK until this year. How would you know somebody who...

Me: Just tell me, dad. I'm curious.

Martin: Her name is Camilla Modise. Are you happy now?

Me: Modise? Isn't that your surname? Is she related to you?

Martin: Yes, she is. She is Hector's daughter.

Me: Uncle Hector, your... are you talking about your brother?

...

He nodded.

...

Me: So is Camilla my cousin?

Martin: Yes, she is.

Me: Do you see why I say that my mom is bad? Now I don't know all my family members because of her. I only met Uncle Hector twice and he was not with his family members.

Martin: I am very stressed. I don't know where to start looking for Camilla.

Me: I will help you look for her.

Martin: Thato, you really need to stay out of this. You are 8 years old. How can you possibly find someone I can't find?

Me: You never know, dad. Please change my surname soon.

Martin: The surname Modise will get you in danger. Please be Moraka for few more years. Those people does not even know that you are my daughter since you only started living in SA this year. It's good that way because what I'm going to do to them will be worse than what they did to my brother and his family.

Me: Which people are you talking about?

Martin: You don't need to know anything, Thato.

Me: Does Camilla know you?

Martin: Very well.

Me: Dad, don't you think that you made a foolish mistake by selling your old house? What if Camilla goes there looking for you?

Martin: She knows that I sold that house. I had to sell that house because of your mother. I was living in a hotel until I bought this house and finally convinced your mother to allow you to live with me.

Me: Oh.

Martin: You only came to SA a week after everything bad that happened to my brother and his family. Focus on making friends at school since you are new. Focus on what children do and stay out of this.

Me: But dad, I want to help you find Camilla. Can't you just let me...

...

He walked away.

## Chapter 16

[At Night]

[Thato]

I went to the basement in the house and I found my dad cleaning guns and some weird weapons.

...

Me: (Smiles) Wow, dad. You are so cool. I didn't know that you have things like that.

Martin: There's a lot you don't know and it's okay. What are you doing here?

Me: I want to talk.

Martin: Why do you suddenly sound like a grownup? Who's influencing you at school?

Me: (Giggles) No one. Do you mind telling me the whole story?

Martin: What story?

Me: How did Uncle Hector and...

Martin: Thato????

Me: Dad, I just want to know how everything happened.

Martin: I will tell you when you are 18 years old.

Me: What???? 10 years from now????

Martin: Yes, you don't need to know everything right now.

Me: But how did you know that Camilla survived if she's not even here with you?

Martin: If I answer your question, do you promise not to ask any more questions?

...

I smiled and nodded.

...



Martin: Okay. Well, I found The Modises thrown into this other River all thanks to an insider. He had told me that Camilla was actually not Camilla but someone else.

Me: Insider? What's that?

Martin: Someone who works for me but pretending to be working for those horrible people.

Me: I am lost. How was Camilla not Camilla?

Martin: I'll stop here.

Me: Okay, okay. One more question. Do you trust the person who works for both you and the horrible people you mentioned?

Martin: With my everything.

Me: Why? What if he betrays you?

Martin: He won't. He really won't.

Me: Okay. So how is...

Martin: No. Go to sleep. Did Lydia leave?

Me: Yes. She left. I already ate and took a bath.

Martin: I will come up in few minutes to read a bedtime story for you.

Me: I don't want to listen to bedtime stories anymore. I want to be a big girl like my friend.

Martin: (Laughs) I wonder who your friend is. You are truly becoming someone different.

Me: Is it bad?

Martin: No. it's not bad. I like it. I always wanted you to be strong.

Me: Good. So no more bedtime stories.

Martin: Baby girl, the doctor told us to read you a bedtime story every night so that you can sleep peacefully. How will you forget everything that your mother put you through if you are suddenly changing your bedtime routine?

Me: I will deal with it myself. If you believe that Camilla is alive, that means that she's very strong even after what happened to her family members. I want to be like Camilla and Khumo.

Martin: Khumo? Who's Khumo?

Me: My friend. She's the smartest girl in my class. She's the reason why I'm no longer known as the new kid in class. She's the only newbie now

but she tops the entire class and school. Her intelligence is out of this world.

Martin: (Laughs) Really? Does that mean that you are no longer the number one intelligent student at school?

...

I giggled and scratched my head.

...

Martin: Wait, is there actually somebody smarter than you when it comes to school and getting high marks?

Me: Well, sometimes I'm neck on neck with Khumo and sometimes it's a tie. I'm still smart. Khumo is just smarter than me. Do you know that she can calculate big numbers without a calculator? She's also good with puzzles. She's actually good with everything so how can somebody like that not beat me? I am smart but not smarter than her.

Martin: Wow, is there actually someone like Camilla and Hector out there? I feel like you just described them.

Me: Really? Is Camilla also smarter than me? Wow, it would be nice to have friends who are smart like Camilla and Khumo. The three of us would be known as The Smarty Pants.

Martin: (Laughs) I love you so much. Thank you for cheering me up. I was in a bad mood but your big mouth is always making things much easier for me.

Me: My mouth is not big.

Martin: You know exactly what I meant. Go to bed.

...

I kissed his cheek.

...

Me: Goodnight, dad.

Martin: Are you sure that you don't want me to read a bedtime story for you?

Me: No. I am serious. I will get better by not relying on stories to be able to sleep.

Martin: Mhmm, I like this Khumo of yours. She's a good influence.

...

I smiled and left the basement.

...

[Some Weeks Later]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I was coming from the library not far from home when I bumped into teacher's son, Aiden. I know that he has been following me since last week but I'll act like I didn't know.

...

Wow, he's very handsome. I have only seen pictures of him but now that I see him in person and closer, I must say that he's truly handsome.

...

He stood before me and smiled.

...

Me: What?

Aiden: Grow up fast and be my wife.

Me: What? Are you crazy? Who says that to an 8 year old?

Aiden: (Laughs) Can't I joke with you? Are you always this serious?

Me: I am shocked. Do you go around saying that to everyone?

Aiden: No. I only said it to you.

Me: Why?

Aiden: Because you are interesting. You remind me of someone.

Me: Who?

Aiden: I don't know.

Me: I'm leaving.

Aiden: Okay. I am going to be honest with you. I didn't know how to approach you but the brothers of the boys you fought with last week are following you. They have actually been following you this entire time.

Me: I know.

Aiden: What? So why are you still going out as you please? The boys you beat up last week are probably the same age as you but their brothers are older than you so aren't you scared?

Me: I'm not scared of anyone.

Aiden: Wow, you are weird. Do you mean that I've been following you around for nothing? Do you know that I have been following you since the day you fought with those boys?

Me: Why were you following me around and how come I never knew that you were following me?

Aiden: I wanted to protect you. Well, I am a good follower. I followed you from afar.

...

Are you really a good follower? I know very well that you have been following me so do better next time.

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Me. (Laughs) Good follower? Wow.

Aiden: (Smiles) Wow, you laughed. This is the first time I see you laugh ever since the day I've been following you around. You are always cold and...

Me: I'm leaving.

Aiden: I will protect you. The people following you are really going to act today.

Me: I know and I'm ready.

Aiden: Wow, what kind of a child are you? (Smiles) I like you a lot.

Me: I'm leaving.

Aiden: Okay. Let's go.

...

He really left with me. What kind of a fool is this one? He's too nice. I blame teacher; her son is nice just like her.

...

We purposely went to an isolated place to lead the people who were following me there.

...

Me: Are you not scared, Aiden?

Aiden: How do you know my name?

...

Oh, my goodness. Did I just say his name? I totally forgot that he didn't introduce himself to me.

...

Me: Well, you are my teacher's son. I've seen your picture on her lock screen when she sent me to the office to get her phone.

Aiden: Oh, what's your name?

Me: Khumo. I am Khumo.

Aiden: I thought that you would lie to me. I know that you are Khumo... Khumo Jones.

Me: How do you know?

Aiden: I told you that I have been following you from afar in order to protect you so I've seen you with The Jones. You also live with them.

Me: How do you know The Jones?

Aiden: Who doesn't know The Jones?

Me: Yeah, you are right. They are well known. But how can you conclude that I'm Khumo Jones?

Aiden: Isn't it obvious? I had to dig. When you kept on going to The Jones mansion, I knew that you were related to them. I just didn't know how until I found out on my own that you are the adopted daughter of The Jones.

Me: Do you know all the children?

Aiden: Yes. I actually go to the same school with Kelsy and Daniel. I'm in the same class as Daniel.

Me: No wonder you know The Jones so much. Are you friends with Daniel?

Aiden: Do you want me to be honest?

Me: Yes, please.

Aiden: I don't like The Jones. I don't like Daniel and Kelsy. Kelsy is in Grade 9 and she keeps telling the whole school that I'm her boyfriend. Daniel is a douchebag.

Me: (Laughs) I don't blame you. Since you don't like The Jones, does that mean you don't like me?

Aiden: You are different. You are adopted. You may appear cold and brutal but there's just something that I like about you. You are not a bad person.

Me: What do you know?

Aiden: I'm a good judge of character.

Me: Whatever.

Aiden: Those bullies are finally here. Should we teach them a lesson?

Me: Aren't you scared?

Aiden: No. I'm not. Are you scared?

Me: No. I waited for this day.

Aiden: (Smiles) Okay.

...

For some reason, I felt like I could trust Aiden. I don't know if it's because he's teacher's son or if it's because he knows that I'm related to The Jones and wouldn't hurt me.

...

The people who were following us came closer to us.

...

Guy 1: Aiden Smith, what are you doing here? Give the girl to us and I'll forget you've crossed me before.

...

What? Do they really know Aiden?

...

Aiden: (Laughs) You must be crazy. Do I look like I'm scared of you?

Me: Do you know one another?

Guy 2: Little girl, how dare you hurt our brothers?

Me: (Laughs) You should be ashamed of yourself. Do you know what those bullies of your brothers did? They were bullying this other girls. I had to teach them a lesson.

Guy 3: (Laughs) Well, we will also teach you a lesson. We are older than you. We will definitely beat you up.

Me: Never again would anyone touch me.

Guy 3: What can you do to us? You are so young.

Guy 4: (Laughs) She's stupid. She's...

...

I hit him on his belly before he could finish talking and poked him with a poisonous needle. He immediately hit the ground and died.

...

Me: (Laughs) I guess he won't play with me anymore. He's already dead.

Guy 1: What? What did you do to him? Little Bitc...

Me: Say it and you will also die.

Guy 1: Do you know what you've done? We will tell our entire family and they will come for you.

Me: (Laughs) Do you seriously think that you'll leave this place alive? You all walked into my trap. Would I lead you to a place I didn't know? You have been following me around for so long because you were planning to rape me and kill me. I know everything.

...

Aiden looked at me. He was so shocked.

...

Guy 1: How do you know everything?

Guy 2: Do you think that we can't catch you right now and kill you? We are not scared of Aiden.

Me: Do you think that I wouldn't do this without Aiden? He was never a part of this. I've planned everything alone. Now tell me, where is Leticia's family members? Are you working for Johnny?

Guy 3: She knows a lot. She has to die.

Guy 2: I'll go ask for help from the gang. Don't let that little b\*tch get away.

Me: I wouldn't leave if I were you.

...

Guy 2 began to run to a direction he was not supposed to run to.

...

Me: Someone needs to stop him or else death will.

Guy 3: You are a horrible...

...

BOOM!! BOOM!! BOOM!! BOOM!! And just like that Guy 2 stepped on the bomb as he was running away and I made sure to activate it. He died right there.

...

They won't even know that without me, the traps I set for them would not just be active and kill somebody. I am the one controlling everything here. Anybody who passes here would not get affected unless I do something. I've set the traps two nights ago and some people still came to this place but nothing happened to them because they were not my target. I didn't want to do any of this. What Uncle Johnny did, provoked me to do this. I HAD TO DO THIS!!!!

...

Me: Oops, I asked all of you to stop him but you didn't. I will ask for the last time. Where is Leticia's family?

...

Yes, I allowed these fools to follow me because of what I found out last week. How did we end up to this day? This is what happened...

## Chapter 17

[Flashback - A Week Ago - Monday]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I arrived from school and I was fuming because I had a fight with the bully in my class. How dare she try to bully Thato?? I'm so angry. Well, I'm grateful that teacher did not take us to the principal's office so family members will not be involved in what happened today.

...

I headed to the laundry room and heard things I didn't plan to hear. Well, the nearest laundry room to my bedroom is the one opposite Uncle Johnny's bedroom so I was about to walk in the laundry room when I heard someone crying in Uncle Johnny's bedroom. I stood outside the door and listened.

...

Johnny: Leticia, if you think that you can walk away from me, you must forget it. I am the only one who can do things to you not that clown of your husband. I will never let you see your family again until you give Khumo to me.

...

Wait? Is he talking to Aunt Letty? Khumo? Who is Khumo? Me? What????

...

Johnny: Why do you keep on protecting Khumo? I just want to taste her once. Why should I keep on only enjoying your daughters and you? I also want Khumo.

...

I was losing it. I am not stupid. I know exactly what this pervert is talking about. Aunt Letty's daughters are the same age as me and Kelsy so that's 8 and 15. No!!!! No!!!! This man is really wrong.



...

I put my school uniform in the laundry room and ran to my bedroom. I locked my bedroom door and used the card to go to the secret room. When I got to the secret room, I allowed cameras in the secret room to capture everything that was happening in Uncle Johnny's bedroom. I sat there, watched and listened to everything.

...

Johnny beat up Aunt Letty and forced himself on her. I covered my eyes with my hands and screamed. I was losing it. I felt powerless. I wanted to go and help Aunt Letty so much but what could I do when I just heard that Uncle Johnny also wants me? Would I just give myself away like that? I can't even kill Uncle Johnny unplanned and give The Jones a chance to suspect me or my intentions. Even if I had a plan to kill Uncle Johnny, I can't do it because clearly he has Aunt Letty's family members. I need to save Aunt Letty's family members first and deal with Uncle Johnny after.

...

I want to grow up so bad. I really do. I didn't want to have blood on my hands as a child but now it looks like I am destined to have blood on my hands from a young age.

...

I sat right opposite where my family member's met their demise and everything started playing in my head. Hearing Aunt Letty screaming and crying, I was also able to hear my sisters and mother screaming and crying for help right across the glass of the secret room. I covered my ears. I started screaming and crying so much. My mental state was disturbed so much.

...

Why do I have to go through these horrible things? Would I end up losing my sanity if I don't get help? I'm really not okay. My nose started bleeding.

...

[Few Minutes Later]

Mr Jones would do anything for me. So maybe I should tell him how horrible Uncle Johnny is. He will believe me and help me out. Yes, I will go back to my bedroom and call him.

...

I was about to switch off the computer when I saw Mr Jones walking in Uncle Johnny's bedroom. I smiled and wiped away my tears.

...

Uncle Johnny is surely going down. He has been caught. How will he save himself now? They caught him red handed.

...

Mr Jones: Okay, Johnny. You've had your turn. Now it's my turn. Move.

...

Wait, what does he mean?

...

Johnny: You came back fast. Let me finish first.

...

Mr Jones pushed Uncle Johnny away and also did the same thing to Aunt Letty. He forced himself on Aunt Letty.

...

I looked away. I was really shocked. I thought that he was different. I thought that he wouldn't do the same thing to Aunt Letty. Now who will help me? It's clear that I can never trust Mr Jones with anything. It's clear that he's a monster and wouldn't help Aunt Letty. Does this mean that Mr Jones would give me to Uncle Johnny??

...

[Some Time Later]

The cousins started laughing so I continued to watch. They were done with what they were doing.

...

Letty: Dean Jones, I hate you so much. Do you know that Johnny also wants Khumo? You will...

...

Mr Jones slapped Aunt Letty.

...

Mr Jones: HOW DARE YOU SAY THINGS LIKE THAT????  
NOBODY WOULD TOUCH KHUMO. STOP LYING!!

Johnny: She is really lying. Why would I want my own cousin's daughter?

Letty: You are a good actor, Johnny. You want Khumo and...

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Mr Jones got mad and threw Aunt Letty out of the room... naked. I couldn't believe it. Who would treat somebody like this? Aunt Letty is powerless so I don't get it. Why are they doing this to her?

...

Mr Jones: I trust you, Johnny. I know that you wouldn't do anything to my children. Khumo is my daughter and I don't want anything bad to happen to her.

Johnny: (Smiles) Thank you for trusting me.

...

I guess that Mr Jones will not give me to Uncle Johnny but that does not change anything. I still hate him so much. I will do things alone. I will find Aunt Letty's family members at any cost.

...

I switched off the computer and left the secret room the moment Mr Jones and Uncle Johnny left Uncle Johnny's bedroom. I went to my bathroom to take a shower. I also changed my bloody clothes and wore something clean.

...

[Later That Day]

I went to the kitchen and found Aunt Letty cooking. She didn't have bruises on her face. Uncle Johnny did not touch her face when beating her up but I could tell that her body was in pain.

...

Me: Aunt, do you need anything?

Letty: No, dear. I'm okay.

Me: Should I help you cook?

Letty: (Smiles) No. I'm okay.

Me: You look like you are in pain. Is everything okay?

...

She smiled and nodded. Why are they treating her so bad? Does Mrs Jones even know that her husband is... oh, my goodness. It's too much.

...

I got myself a glass of water and left the kitchen.

...

[Tuesday]

I began to keep an eye on Uncle Johnny and discovered so many things. I wired his phone and allowed cameras in the secret room to capture everything in his bedroom. I also found the people working for him and it was easy because they came in and out of the house when Uncle Johnny was alone or only with Aunt Letty. I took it upon myself to use myself as a bait to lead those people to their demise.

...

[Friday]

I spent Tuesday night, Wednesday night and Thursday night watching serial killer movies, action movies, documentaries about murder and anything that would end up helping me. I took notes and knew exactly what to do.

...

I already knew what to do but I felt like a monster. I hated what I wanted to do but there was no turning back.

...

There are two boys at school and they are bullies. Their brothers actually work for Uncle Johnny and I know this because there was a time when I saw those two boys with Uncle Johnny and the brothers.

...

I lied to my driver after school and told him that I was going to the library. I just wanted to follow the two boys from my school. They happened to bully this other little girls for nothing on their way and I knew that it was my chance to put my plan into action. I helped those girls. I fought with the two boys from my school. They started crying and told me that their brothers would deal with me. As I said, I wanted to use myself as bait so this is what I wanted. People never cross these two boys because they are scared of their brothers so since my target is the brothers, why not cross these two fools?

...

[Later That Day]

I was walking from my Taekwondo class when I saw people following me. That was fast. Let's do this.

...

Well, I always walk from Taekwondo class. I asked Mr and Mrs Jones not to send the driver to pick me up especially when I feel like walking. So sometimes the driver is with me and sometimes he's not. It all depends on whether I want him around or not.

...

[Few Days Later]

I was followed everyday. I still continued to keep an eye on Uncle Johnny. Yesterday when I was in the secret room, I was shocked and scared when the brothers reported me to Uncle Johnny. They were with Uncle Johnny in his bedroom and told Uncle Johnny everything and how they know that I live with The Jones. Uncle Johnny replied by saying "So what? What Dean Jones does not know will not kill him or get us killed. That girl must be raped and killed. I also want to taste her so don't enjoy her alone. She will be killed only after we all enjoy her. Continue following her around. She likes walking so getting her will be easy."

...

How can that man easily say the word rape without feeling bad? He has daughters so how can he want to do such things to me? How can he be so cruel? I was so shocked and scared so I knew that I had to do something to protect myself. I knew that I had to kill them first.

...

I snuck out of the house with everything I needed when everyone was asleep to set my traps at an isolated place. The action movies, serial killer movies and all those bad shows and documentaries I watched helped me out a lot.

...

I cried so much when I arrived at home because I felt like my childhood was ruined. I didn't want to be this kind of a person at a young age. My

life is like a movie now and I don't think that I can turn back. It's either I protect myself first or allow others to kill me.

...

Mr Jones, I hate you so much for turning me into a monster at a young age. I didn't want any of this at all but now I have to get rid of people who want to do horrible things to me and get rid of me. Nobody deserves to go through this at such a young age. There's no turning back now. I will surely lose if I turn back so I need to do anything to protect myself. I need to act first and fast. I will have to get blood on my hands even if I don't want to. I'm turning into a monster just to protect myself and live.

## Chapter 18

[Present Time]

[Aiden]

Wait, how is this little girl capable of doing such things? I am shocked and the truth is she doesn't look scared at all. Who is Khumo Jones? I'm very interested.

...

Guy 3: Who are you? How are you capable of this? Who helped you? Aiden, are you part of this?

Me: Me? I'm as shocked as you are.

Khumo: (Smiles) Aiden, do you now know why I was never scared?

Me: Mhmm. But... who are you?

...

Guy 1 attempted to attack Khumo but Khumo acted fast and stabbed him with something. Hold on, does Khumo have weapons on her right now? How is she able to do everything? I'm lost. I thought that I was smart but today I feel stupid and a little girl is the one making me feel stupid.

...

Guy 1 immediately fell but he didn't die. He was in so much pain. I could tell by the way he was whimpering.

...

Guy 3 knelt down before Khumo.

...

Guy 3: Are you her?

Me: Who? Who could she be? Do you know her?

Guy 3: Could it be that you didn't die with them? Are you living with The Jones to avenge your...

...

Khumo did not let him finish. She immediately poured water on him but now I was shocked when the guy started screaming.

...

Me: Khumo, what's going on with him?

Khumo: What I poured on him may look like water but it's a deadly poison. He will die in the next five minutes.

Guy 3: Please don't let me die. I won't tell anyone about you. I won't tell them that you are still alive.

Me: Still alive?? What is he talking about?

Khumo: I can't let them live because now they know who I am. They must die.

Guy 1: You... Who... who replaced you?

...

Khumo laughed.

...

Khumo: Who else? Who is missing?

Guy 1: Maya???? Did...

Me: Maya Jones? The missing child? But what are you guys talking about?

Guy 1: She's a devil. You must watch your back, Aiden.

Khumo: Where is Leticia's family members? It looks like you are working for those horrible people. I thought that you only worked for Johnny but I was wrong. Well, I guess I didn't do a bad thing. Good riddance.

Guy 3: You... You... will never find Letty's family members if you kill us.

Khumo: Are you sure? Did you forget who Aiden Smith is? He'll help me since he got himself involved.

...

I was so shocked? What is she saying?

...

Me: Huh?? Me??

Khumo: You are the only Aiden Smith here. You are capable of helping me find the people I'm looking for and you will also be the one to get rid of these people's bodies.

Me: What?? Who are you?? What do you know about me? What is going on here? I am very lost.

Khumo: You are not lost. You are just shocked. You will understand everything later on.

Guy 3: Aiden will betray you. He hates The Jones.

Khumo: Trust me. He will never betray me. I didn't hide anything from him because I trust him. But I am smarter than him. I'd still beat him at his own game if he were to betray me.

Guy 1: You are nothing like your father. Your father was a righteous man. Did you have to be exactly like your uncle? Your father...

Khumo: (Shouts) DON'T YOU DARE SAY ANYTHING ABOUT MY FAMILY MEMBERS. YES, MY FATHER WAS A RIGHTEOUS MAN BUT WHAT DID THEY DO TO HIM??

Guy 1: Your father...

...

Khumo got angry and poked both Guy 1 and Guy 3 with a needle. The needle must be poisonous. The guys died immediately.

...

Me: I... what just happened? It looks like you know me.

Khumo: To be honest with you, I always knew that you were following me so I had to do some digging about you. You are not as innocent as you look. Does your mom even know the real you?

...

I shook my head.

...

Khumo: You are just 18 years old. Why did you take such a path in life?

Me: I... well, it's what my father does so...



Khumo: Does your mom know that you and your father are gangsters?

Me: No. Please don't say anything to her. Actually I'm from a family of gangsters. Mom is the only one in the dark at home.

Khumo: You always knew that The Jones are also gangsters so the time you took your mother's car, it was not a prank, right? You were really saving her.

...

I nodded.

...

Khumo: Well, I will keep your secret for you. Your family's secret is safe with me. I won't tell your mom anything.

Me: Thank you.

Khumo: I am going home. Get rid of the bodies.

Me: Won't I step on your traps and also die?

Khumo: Don't worry. As long as I don't do anything, the traps will not do anything to you.

Me: Why do you trust me?

Khumo: (Smiles) I will tell you after years.

Me: What? Are you serious?

Khumo: Bye, Aiden.

...

She left.

...

Hold on, am I in a dream right now? Did... woahhhhh!!!!

...

[Days Later]

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I still did not do anything to Uncle Johnny because... No, Johnny. He doesn't deserve to be called Uncle. I will refer to him as Johnny in my thoughts and when talking to the people I trust but when talking to him or talking about him around The Jones I will keep on calling him Uncle Johnny. Well, yes... I still did not do anything to Johnny because I feel like it's not yet time. I still don't like him so I will deal with him one day only when I've planned properly. I want everything to be smooth so I

can't risk with my life right now. His biggest supporter is Mr Jones so killing him so soon will definitely be risky.

...

Well, Aiden actually took care of everything. He framed another group of bullies for killing the guys I killed. The people he framed are also gangsters so nobody would even suspect me. Now The Jones and the family members of the guys I killed are fighting against the people Aiden framed. The Jones won't even suspect me because they don't know that I know what they do.

...

Well, I knew that Aiden is capable of a lot so I let him do all the cleaning up and the framing for me. If Aiden was not in the picture, I was going to leave the bodies right where they were. Who would suspect me? I am just 8 years old. Well, I'm also not scared of anyone. I will always stand my ground. I'm tired of being weak. Johnny, thank you for making me stronger. You pushed me to be the person I am right now.

...

[10 Years Later]

I just turned 18 years of age a week ago and there was a party for me. Johnny is no longer living with us, obviously. He lives in his own house with his family members so at least I could breathe a little but I know that he still wants me. He's always coming to visit The Jones and I hate him even more because he doesn't want to change at all. He's still a pervert.

...

The Jones still believe that I'm a bookworm, an innocent nerd so I guess I'm very good at acting.

...

Aunt Letty stopped me and Aiden the time we found her family members and tried to set them free. Well, she had said that if we set her family members free, The Jones will believe that someone powerful than them was behind everything. She told us that The Jones will definitely look for the people who set her family members free. I was stubborn at first until she told me the entire story of why The Jones are treating her and her family members bad. Aunt Letty's husband was actually my

daddy's most trusted accountant so he is refusing to give The Modises money to The Jones. He actually told The Jones that he doesn't know anything about The Modises money so The Jones got mad at him and said that he was lying just to protect The Modises money. The Jones took it upon themselves to teach Aunt Letty's entire family members a lesson all because of the husband.

...

I got so mad and wished I could say "Aunt Letty, tell your husband to give the money to The Jones. I am Camilla Modise and I will make sure to get the money back." But... but I couldn't just give myself away. Well, Aunt Letty's family members are no longer hidden by The Jones. They live in their house again but The Jones literally own them and their lives. The Jones still do as they please with them even though they are no longer held captive. To be honest, they are not free; so it's heartbreaking and this is not something I can easily deal with especially after knowing that Aunt Letty and her family members are suffering just for my family members. What would be my reason for helping people who are loyal to The Modises? If I help these people, I feel like it would be the same as going to The Jones and saying "Hey, I'm Camilla Modise". It's really dangerous so I can only give them freedom when all The Jones are gone and it's not anytime soon. I didn't realize how powerful The Jones are. They have so many connections so for my plan to work, I will have to get rid of The Jones' supporters first. Yes, I will have to snip off their wings first and it's going to take time.

...

Aiden is the only one who knows my true colors but that fool still hasn't figured out that Maya Jones is dead and she replaced me. He still doesn't know my real identity and he wouldn't stop following me around just like Thato. Aiden is now 28 years of age. When I turned 16 years, he told me to grow up fast and be his wife. He told me the same thing when I turned 18. He is 10 years older than me, how dare he?

...

Well, I never knew that wearing a fake face would be this tiresome. I have to keep on changing my face but also making sure that it looks like the one of the 8 year little girl, Khumo. I change my faces every after

two years. The face does not grow with me like my real face so I have to keep on changing it just so it can look real. I've had 5 faces now after the first one so altogether it's 6 faces. I will change again when I turn 20. It's really tiring and my real face is extremely beautiful, I make sure to check it out every month in the secret room.

...

I'm a very beautiful girl and I can see both my mom and dad in me so it's good that I am always hiding my true face otherwise I was going to get caught the moment I turned 14 years old. I feel like I started looking more like my parents the moment I turned 14 years old. How could I have explained that?? Now that I'm 18 years old, I resemble my parents a lot. I'm their real photocopy. Like, did they want to sabotage my plans? Wow.

## Chapter 19

[Camilla aka Khumo]

I was at this other restaurant in the morning when I saw some boys giving Thato a hard time. I went over to them.

...

Me: What's going on here?

Guy 1: Oh, another beauty is here. This is going to be fun.

Guy 2: You are right.

Guy 3: Does she really think that we'll leave a beauty like her?

...

They laughed.

...

I pulled Thato to my side and made her stand behind me.

...

Me: What's going on?

Thato: They told me that I should go back to UK with my British accent. They also wanted me to hug them. I refused so they didn't want to let me go. They blocked my way.

...

I looked at the guys and smirked.

...

Guy 3: What? Are you trying to intimidate us?

Guy 1: Who is she to intimidate us?

Guy 2: She...

Me: I am warning you. Leave.

Guy 2: Or what?

...

They laughed.

...

I got annoyed and kicked Guy 2. The other two guys attempted to fight with me but I beat them up. Thato started cheering. What a fool!!!!

...

I held her hand and led the way. We arrived at school.

...

Thato: (Smiles) You were very cool.

Me: You are annoying. Can't you stand up for yourself?

Thato: I never experienced what I experienced today. I decided to walk to school today. I didn't know that I would meet such people.

Me: Fine. Next time don't walk to school unless you know how to deal with such people.

Thato: Okay but why is my British accent following me everywhere? I've been living in SA for 10 years now. Shouldn't I have a South African accent by now?

Me: South Africa is a diverse country with different languages and accents. It's not easy to pick up a South African accent because there are a lot. Everyone is different and it's okay if you are different. It's okay if you speak different. Not everyone in South Africa speaks with the same accent.

Thato: (Smiles) You are so nice. You made me feel better.

Me: Go to class.

Thato: Why? We are in the same class so I'll go with you.

...

I saw Aiden's car outside the school yard so I went to him. Thato followed me.

...

Aiden: Huh? How do you know Mr Martin's daughter?

Thato: (Smiles) Aiden, how do you know my friend?

Aiden: Are the two of you friends?

Me: I don't have friends.

Aiden: (Smiles) Thato, who is she? She's really good at hiding things.

Thato: What on earth are you talking about?

Aiden: I guess you are also in the dark. Oh, how's Mr T doing?

Thato: Mr T and his family members are fine now. My dad was able to help them a lot.

Aiden: Are they completely fine?

Thato: Yes, they are.

Me: What are the two of you talking about? I'm leaving. What's the point of me being here?

Aiden: (Smiles) Sorry, my beloved wife. Don't get jealous.

...

Here we go again.

...

Thato: Huh? Wife?

Aiden: Yes, she's going to be my wife one day.

Thato: (Smiles) Are the two of you dating?

Aiden: We are. Go to class. I want to talk to my love.

Thato: (Smiles) Okay.

...

Thato left.

...

Me: You are exactly like Kelsy. How can you lie and say that the two of us are dating?

Aiden: (Giggles) How else was I going to make Thato leave us?

Me: Old man, I'm not interested in you.

Aiden: You used to call me a baby when I was 18, 19 and 20. Now that I'm 28 you call me an old man? Have you seen an old man like me?

Me: My goodness. Aiden, why are you here?

Aiden: Are you not the one who came to me first?

Me: I know that you came to my school to see me. Speak fast. School will start soon and they will close the gates.

Aiden: (Smiles) You look so good in Matric uniform.

Me: You've told me like a million times.

Aiden: Hey, must you always be this cold? Do you think that I'd stop following you around even if you are cold and rude? I will never.

...

I just rolled my eyes.

...

Aiden: Well, my father, Mr Martin and Mr T are planning to attack The Jones in two days so I want you to be safe. Don't be at home on that day. They are planning to get rid of all The Jones.

Me: Hold on, are you being serious right now?

...

He nodded.

...

Me: Who's Mr Martin and Mr T?

Aiden: Oh, Mr Martin is Thato's father and Mr T is a friend to both my father and Mr Martin; his name is Tony so we call him Mr T.

Me: Oh, I see. I didn't think that you'd know Thato's father since you are a gangster.

Aiden: (Laughs) I know many people.

Me: But you don't know me.

Aiden: Well, you are truly a mystery.

Me: Please tell your father and the others not to attack The Jones.

Aiden: I thought that you hate The Jones.

Me: I do but I don't want to die with them yet.

Aiden: That's why I told you not to be home in two days.

Me: I am in Matric. Where will I go? Isn't that suspicious?

Aiden: Who cares if it's suspicious? The Jones will die so they won't get a chance to suspect you.

Me: They won't die. Trust me on this one. They have so many connections so they will definitely get saved. Your plan will fail.

...

He kept quiet. I could tell that he was thinking about what I just said.

...

Me: Done?

Aiden: Uh, do they really have many connections? I thought that I knew all their connections. Could there be others?

Me: There is more. The Jones have been using me in their shady dealings. They think that I don't know anything but I know everything. Trust me, by now I know all their connections.

Aiden: Wow. We almost went there to get ourselves killed.

Me: Exactly. So tell me about the connections you know and I'll tell you if it's all of them or not.

...

He began telling me. I stared at him and just shook my head.

...

Aiden: What is it?

Me: They have more than that. Triple the number you just mentioned and you got it.

Aiden: Are you serious? That's a lot.

Me: Exactly my point. So the best thing to get rid of The Jones is to get rid of their connections first.

Aiden: You have a point. But what will I say to everyone? They don't even know that I'm friends with someone who lives with The Jones.

Me: Idiot, we are not friends. Well, I'm sure that they would kill me once they find out.

Aiden: I won't let that happen. You are adopted so I will explain things to them if they find out about our friendship.

Me: I hope so. I won't allow anyone to kill me before I get rid of The Jones.

Aiden: Why don't you work with us?

Me: I don't want to work with amateurs. Clearly you are all amateurs that's why you wanted to attack The Jones in two days.

Aiden: But my father and his friends planned for years just like you.

Me: They obviously didn't plan enough. Why do they want to get rid of The Jones so bad?

Aiden: The Jones are actually wanted by so many families. They have wronged many families. They go around killing rich families so that



they can acquire their wealth. It's pathetic so we want them to pay for everything bad they did.

...

Well, my family members also died for the same thing... WEALTH!!!!

...

Me: I see. So how come they have not done anything to your family?

Aiden: Trust me, they have tried but they met with the wrong family.

My father was injured because he didn't see it coming but he managed to protect us and even killed Mr Jones' two brothers. Now The Jones and The Smiths are enemies because of what had happened back then.

Me: Where was your mother? How come she doesn't know any of this?

Aiden: Because we always try our best to keep her safe and away from what we do.

Me: I see. She's a very nice woman. I like her a lot.

Aiden: Have you seen her ever since you finished primary school?

...

Yes, Aiden. I am still in touch with your mother. We call one another a lot and I always meet her as Camilla. I always disguise though.

...

Aiden: Khumo????

Me: No. I'm going to class. Bye.

Aiden: Bye. Take care.

Me: Tell your father and his friends to wait for 4 more years.

Aiden: WHAT???? 4 YEARS????

Me: Patience is everything, Aiden. A plan will be perfect only if there's patience. My childhood was ruined so now I want to go to Tertiary and enjoy. Do I not deserve that?

Aiden: Okay. Fine. I'll see what I'll do.

Me: I am going to Tertiary next year and I'll be done with Tertiary when I'm 21 years of age. After turning 22, I will deal with The Jones. Your father and his friends can help me by dealing with The Jones' connections.

...

He just smiled.

...

Me: What's going on?

Aiden: You have really grown up. You used to call my mom "teacher" and you also used to refer to Tertiary as "A school for big girls". Now you talk different. You are now a grownup.

Me: Of course I am. That sweet little Ca... little Khumo is no more.

Aiden: I can tell. I raised you.

Me: (Laughs) WHAT????

Aiden: (Smiles) Heyyy???? You laughed. I have not seen you laugh in so many years.

...

Did I really just laugh?? If it's not Thato, it's Aiden. How annoying can these two be?

...

Me: You are so annoying. Don't try it again.

Aiden: There's nothing wrong with wanting to see you laugh. You deserve to be happy just like everyone else that's why I'm going to ask my father and his friends to wait for 4 more years. I want you to go to Tertiary and enjoy it to the fullest. I want you to always be happy.

Me: I'm warning you. Don't catch feelings, Old Man.

Aiden: (Smiles) Go to class.

Me: Let's go on a killing spree later on. Is that okay?

Aiden: It's a killing spree for you and a cleaning spree for me. Who do you want to kill this time?

Me: The security guard who works for The Jones.

Aiden: WHAT???? Isn't that dangerous?

Me: Don't worry. I've got everything planned.

Aiden: Why do you want to kill him?

Me: Because he betrayed my family members.

Aiden: Huh???? Was he working for your family members????

Me: Yes. He was. Are you in or not??

Aiden: YES, BOSS. THE CLEANER IS IN!!!!

...

I went to class. I couldn't stop laughing. Why does Aiden have to be so foolish? Yes, boss, the cleaner is in?? What the hell??

Chapter 20

\*\*Please read Chapter 1 before reading only if you forgot what Chapter 1 was all about. Khumo will now be referred to as Khumo not “Camilla aka Khumo” like in previous Chapters.\*\*

.  
.

[Khumo]

Yes, and that’s what happened. It’s been 4 years since I asked Aiden to give me time. Well, I did ask Aiden to wait for me to finish Tertiary school first so I finished school last year and I turned 22 years old a month ago so I’m ready to do everything I always wanted to do. I’m ready to put my plan into action. I tried to push Aiden away when I started dating his enemy last year but he still sticks around despite being mad at me. I was extremely mean to Thato in the last 4 years, hoping that she would also back off but she’s stubborn. She still likes me a lot, it scares me. I really can’t bear to lose both Thato and Aiden. I would be cut into pieces if I were to lose them so I want them to stay away from me so bad.

...

Modise? Did Thato say that her surname is Modise? How come? Was she not always Thato Moraka? Or did she get married? I’m still lost. Isn’t Thato supposed to be Thato Martin? Her father is Mr Martin, right? Why was Thato’s surname Moraka then Modise? What am I missing here?

...

I arrived at home and found Kelsy at the door. She was fuming and looked like she was just waiting for me.

...

Kelsy: Khumo, I had told you to stay away from my boyfriend before.

Me: And who’s your boyfriend?

Kelsy: Are you being serious right now? You know exactly who I am talking about.

Me: Are you still talking about Aiden Smith?? Are you mad??

Kelsy: I know that he still follows you around.

Me: You are right. I’m not the one following him around.

Kelsy: You are a horrible person for even dating Njabulo when you know that he's Aiden's enemy.

Me: What I do with my life is not your business. Please leave me alone.

Kelsy: May, Daniel and Oliver are coming back home from Canada tonight. They will help me teach you a lesson.

...

Oh, yes. I almost forgot that tonight those three fools are coming. They have been away for 4 years and now they are coming back to South Africa for good. (Laughs) It's what I want. They are coming back for their own death.

...

Kelsy: Hey???? Did I just hear you laugh??

Me: I'm so happy.

Kelsy: Did you even hear what I said?

Me: Mhmm, I did.

Kelsy: You have been bullying me for the past 4 years. It's now going to be my turn to bully you.

Me: I have never bullied you.

Kelsy: Isn't taking Aiden away from me the same thing as bullying me?

Me: Hey, I didn't take Aiden Smith from you. Are you mad?

Kelsy: I never told mom and dad why you and I are always arguing because...

...

She kept quiet. I know that she didn't tell mom and dad why we are always arguing because she knows that she's supposed to stay away from The Smiths since they are The Jones' enemies.

...

Me: Because...??

Kelsy: Just shut up.

Me: What did I do to you today? I was not even with Aiden.

Kelsy: He posted you on his WhatsApp status. Why can't you stay away from him? He's older than you.

Me: Hold on, did Aiden really post me on WhatsApp?

Kelsy: What's surprising about that? He has posted you so many times before. I've seen it all.

...

I stormed out of the house. I arrived at Aiden's house and let myself in.

...

Aiden: (Smiles) Oh, it's Njabulo's girlfriend. Hi.

Me: What games are you playing with me?

Aiden: What are you talking about?

Me: (Yells) DID YOU SHARE YOUR PERSONAL PHONE NUMBER WITH KELSY???? HOW DARE YOU????

Aiden: Oh, I gave her my number some months ago but why does it matter to you? Are you not happily dating my enemy?

Me: AIDEN, HOW DARE YOU???? HOW CAN YOU DO THAT TO ME??

...

[Aiden]

Wait, it's working. She's really jealous. I should've done this much earlier. I gave Kelsy my phone number because I wanted to test Khumo and see if she really loves Njabulo.

...

Khumo: AIDEN, I AM TALKING TO YOU!!!!

Me: I have nothing to say to you. I don't owe you an explanation.

Khumo: I WILL KILL HER!!!! I WILL KILL HER RIGHT AWAY AND KILL MYSELF. YOU WILL NOT HAVE ANY OF US!!

Me: Go on. Kill her and kill yourself. Your parents would be so disappointed in you.

...

She was now in tears and trust me when I say that I've never seen her cry before. I was now feeling bad for doing this to her.

...

Me: Khu... Khumo?? I'm sorry. I...

...

She spoke calmly.

Me: Dump Njabulo.

...

She wiped away her tears and looked at me.

...

Khumo: Okay. I will do it.

Me: And make sure that you hurt him the same way you hurt me when you started dating him.

Khumo: You are truly inhuman.

Me: I know and I've never hidden that from you. Do you have any idea of how much you hurt me when you started dating my enemy? You always called me an old man but you went for someone older than me. Talk about cruelty and double standards.

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: I am sorry for making you cry. It won't happen again.

Khumo: Well, do you want me to also apologize to you? I won't.

Me: Of course you won't because you are cold and very mean. But today I got to see what I always wanted to see. I got to see that it's possible for your icy heart to melt. I will make it melt, trust me on this one.

Khumo: That would never happen.

Me: It will happen.

Khumo: Block Kelsy.

Me: Not until you break Njabulo's heart into pieces.

Khumo: You are childish, as old as you are.

Me: I don't care. Njabulo must pay for the heartbreak he put me through.

Khumo: And what about Kelsy?

Me: Yes, what about her?

Khumo: What about the heartbreak she put me through?

Me: (Laughs) Are you being serious right now?

Khumo: Yes, I am. What's funny?

Me: I'm not with Kelsy. I have never kissed her or slept with her. How did she put you through a heartbreak?

Khumo: And who said that I slept with Njabulo?

Me: Did you not? He is always bragging about sleeping with you.

Khumo: Are you serious?

Me: I'm very serious.

Khumo: Why is he lying?

Me: Is he really lying?

Khumo: Do you think that I'd give my virginity to Njabulo just like that?

Me: WHAT???? Are you a virgin??

Khumo: I am.

Me: 100% virgin?

Khumo: Yes.

Me: Didn't you break your virginity when you turned 18?

Khumo: And who told you that?

Me: Uhm, it's what most people do.

Khumo: I'm not most people.

Me: (Smiles) Okay. I believe you.

Khumo: So yes, I don't have to be brutal to Niabulo.

Me: You have to.

Khumo: Why? We never did what you thought we did.

Me: Are you aware that I've never had a girlfriend after I met you all because of you?

Khumo: Did I ask you not to have a girlfriend after meeting me?

Me: Are you being serious right now?

Khumo: Ok, fine. Forget what I asked.

Me: You will break up with Njabulo and help me put back the pieces of my heart together.

Khumo: Were you that hurt?

Me: Yes, I was. Unlike you, I am very vocal about my feelings. I love you so much it drives me crazy.

Khumo: Would you have still loved me if I was different from you?

Me: Different in what way?

Khumo: If I was innocent and knew nothing about killing, guns and many more?

Me: Yes, I would have still loved you. I don't love you because of the way you are heartless. I love you because I see the goodness in you. You make me feel good. Your presence in my life makes me feel at peace

and it makes me extremely happy. You still give me butterflies in my tummy even after so many years of knowing you.

Khumo: I see. But you are 10 years older than me. I'm 22 years old and you are 32 years old. Is that even okay?

Me: Isn't Njabulo older than me and who cares about age?

Khumo: Me. I care about age.

Me: But you are with Njabulo right now.

Khumo: It's different. I got with him to push you away.

Me: Oh, did you?? Well, guess what?? I'm not going anywhere. Kill me if you want me to be out of your life.

Khumo: How can I ever do that?

Me: Can you really not kill me?

Khumo: No.

Me: (Smiles) Is it because you also love me like crazy?

Khumo: Old Man, I don't love you.

Me: Actions speak louder than words. I'm not stupid.

Khumo: You are. Stop it already.

Me: Kill me and you will get what you want.

Khumo: Stop saying such things. I'll punch you.

Me: Why shouldn't I say anything? I'm trying to help you.

Khumo: By telling me to kill you? Are you mad?

Me: Yes, I am madly in love with you.

Khumo: You are truly annoying.

...

She walked to the kitchen.

...

I am very serious. I can't stay away from her. She will have to kill me in order for me to be out of her life

Chapter 21

[Khumo]

I went to the kitchen because I was so embarrassed. My stupid actions showed Aiden something I never wanted to show him. I truly don't know when I started catching feelings. I'm very sure that the time I was 18 years old, I still didn't want Aiden romantically. I'm 22 years old now and I still don't know when I caught feelings. All I know is that it's



definitely after I was 18 years old. Aiden really got me this time. Now how can he leave me alone after how I acted? I literally showed him my heart. I wanted to push him away because what I will do is dangerous.

...

Aiden walked in after some time.

...

Aiden: Are you okay now?

...

I couldn't even look at him.

...

Me: It's fine, Aiden.

Aiden: It's? I'm talking about you. What "it" are you talking about?

Me: Aiden, I am leaving.

Aiden: Please look at me.

Me: Listen, you shouldn't have seen that side of me.

Aiden: Why not? I've seen all your sides. I was actually waiting for this one.

Me: I don't like showing emotions and today you made me cry. Are you happy?

Aiden: Yes, I am very happy even though I felt bad making you cry.

...

I looked at him.

...

Me: Do you really love me?

Aiden: With everything.

Me: But I don't love you.

Aiden: Then I will kill myself right away.

...

He grabbed a knife and attempted to stab himself.

...

Me: Wait!!!! I love you!!!!

Aiden: (Smiles) Of course you do. Do you love Njabulo?

...

I shook my head.

...

Aiden: Say that in words.

Me: No. I don't love Njabulo.

Aiden: So why are you with him?

Me: I already told you.

Aiden: Tell me again.

Me: I am with Njabulo because he is your enemy. I just wanted to push you away.

Aiden: So you basically used Njabulo, right?

Me: Yes. I did.

Aiden: Have you ever slept with him?

Me: Not at all. We already talked about this. I'm not even planning to sleep with him. I don't love him at all.

Aiden: Would you lose your virginity to me?

Me: Aiden? What are you doing?

Aiden: Answer me.

Me: Yes, I would.

Aiden: Right now? Right in my house?

Me: Uhh... I'm not ready.

Aiden: Are you not ready or do you just want to lose it to Njabulo?

Me: Anything you want, Aiden. If you want to take my virginity right now then so be it. Let's do it.

Aiden: Okay

...

I agreed because I was already tired of this conversation, I wasn't planning to lose my virginity right now but I was shocked when Aiden took out his phone from the pocket and spoke.

...

Aiden: Did you hear that, Njabulo? She doesn't love you.

Njabulo: (Shouts) HOW CAN SHE DO THIS TO ME???? I AM GOING TO KILL HER THEN KILL YOU.

...

Njabulo hung up. I was disgusted by Aiden. I was fuming.

...

Me: How could you do that to me?

Aiden: Didn't you agree to dump him?

Me: But I didn't ask you to trick me and let me hurt him like this.

Aiden: I told you that he will pay for my heartbreak, did I not?

Me: But did you have to make that call and trick me like that? You are disgusting.

Aiden: It had to be done.

Me: You are truly childish and disgusting. What you just did rubbed me the wrong way. You and I will never be together. Forget it.

...

I pushed him aside and left his house. I will never forgive him for doing that to me.

...

I was walking when I bumped into some man.

...

Me: Sorry.

...

I raised my head to look at the man only to see my uncle. I froze.

...

Martin: Are you okay? I'm sorry about that.

Me: I... well, yes.

Martin: Please be careful. I could tell that you are absent minded.

...

I looked around and realized that I was actually outside the place where I dropped Thato some hours ago. Hold on, where's my car? Did I really walk here?

...

Khumo: I never want to see you ever again.

Me: Even if I give myself to The Jones?

Khumo: What do you mean?

Me: I will allow The Jones to kill me if you stop seeing me.

Khumo: You are a horrible person.

Me: Am I? What about you? I've made my feelings clear to you but you still went for my enemy. Are you not the horrible one?

Khumo: I hate you. I really hate you.

Me: Nope, you don't. You wouldn't be acting this way if you really hated me.

Khumo: Why are you doing this to me?

Me: Isn't it obvious?

Khumo: Is this because of Njabulo?

Me: Yes, you already know that.

Khumo: What should I do for you to block Kelsy's number?

Me: Isn't that obvious?

Khumo: No.

Me: Sorry, sir. I will be careful.

...

Thato walked out through the gate and immediately saw me. I wanted to hide but it was already too late.

...

Thato: Dad, do you know my friend?

Martin: Your friend? Is this the friend you always talk about?

Thato: (Smiles) Yes, she is.

...

Wait a minute, did Thato just call my uncle "dad"? Or did I mishear her?

...

Martin: Oh, Khumo, right?

Thato: Yes, dad. Khumo, meet my dad.

Me: Your dad?

Thato: Yes. He's my dad.

Me: Biological father?

Thato: Yes. What's wrong?

Me: (Giggles) Nothing is wrong. I wonder how you managed to get yourself a stunning father like him.

Thato: (Laughs) You are crazy.

...

It's a dream. It's a dream. I will wake up soon, right?? I mean Thato's father is Mr Martin, right? And how come I know nothing about Thato being my uncle's daughter? I'm really confused.

...

Thato: Khumo, are you here to see me?

Me: I... I was just taking a walk.

Martin: Never take a walk when you are absent minded. It's dangerous.

Me: Yes, sir.

Thato: Aiden can always protect her. He loves her a lot.

...

Okay, she is really going to tell her father about me and that disgusting Aiden.

...

Martin: Aiden Smith?

Thato: Yes. Khumo and Aiden are a couple. Do you know that they have known one another since Khumo was 8 years old and since Aiden was 18 years old? Aiden told me everything. I actually found out only when I was in Matric. Aiden had come to school to see his lover, Khumo.

Martin: That's really interesting. I was beginning to think that he was gay. I didn't know that he had such a beautiful girlfriend.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, sir. What can I call you?

Martin: Oh, sorry. Please forgive my daughter's manners. My name is Martin.

Me: Is your surname also Martin?

Martin: No, not at all.

Me: So why is Aiden always referring to you as Mr Martin?

Martin: (Laughs) Oh, that's how Aiden is. He likes referring to people like that. He refers to me as Mr Martin not because my surname is Martin. Sometimes he refers to his father as Mr Gerard and that's not because his father's surname is Gerard. He also refers to my other friend as Mr T or Mr Tony and that's not because Tony is a surname.

Me: (Smiles) Oh, I see. Well, I've heard a lot about you, Mr Martin.

Martin: Interesting things?

Me: (Smiles) Yes, only interesting and good things.

...

My goodness, and here I was thinking that when Aiden said Mr Martin he meant that Martin was a surname. Martin is a name not a surname. The “famous” Mr Martin that Aiden always talked about all these years happened to be Mr Modise... Martin Modise, my uncle. Aiden though. I was completely misled.

...

Thato: Dad, please go. I want to be with my friend.

Martin: Okay. Well, nice to meet you, Khumo. Thato has told me so many things about you. I also owe you a lot. I know how you have always protected my daughter. You are also the reason why she started becoming strong after her painful past. You are truly her rock. Please join us for dinner in two days. That would really make me happy.

Me: I...

Thato: (Smiles) Please say yes, Khumo.

Me: Okay. I will come.

Martin: (Smiles) Thank you. Bye.

...

He went back inside the yard. I felt like crying. I have been trying my best not to meet up with him all these years but now here we are. He reminds me so much of my dad.

...

Thato: Are you okay?

Me: Yes. I'm fine.

Thato: Do you want to come inside?

Me: No.

Thato: You look troubled.

Me: Who are you, Thato? What is your surname? I want you to be honest with me.

Thato: My surname is Modise.

Me: I always knew you as Moraka.

Thato: Yes, I was Thato Moraka until yesterday. I finally got to change my surname from Moraka to Modise. Moraka is my mother's surname. I truly don't like that woman so I always wanted to change my surname to Modise. Dad had told me to wait for few more years. I used the surname

Moraka for years. Everything was finalized yesterday. I'm now Thato Modise.

...

Oh, I see. But how come I never knew about Thato's existence? I have heard that one of my uncle's daughters was believed to be dead years ago. Could it be Thato? I've met all of my uncle's children years ago when my family members were still alive but I don't remember meeting anyone by the name Thato. I have photos of all my family members including photos of uncle and his family members. Thato is nowhere in those photos. Yes, the photos are old but I'm good when it comes to recognizing people. How can I now ask questions when I don't want to give away my identity? Hold on, I can ask questions without giving away my identity. I just need to be smart.

...

Thato: Khumo????

Me: Huh????

Thato: Are you okay?

Me: What had happened to you before? What painful past was your dad talking about?

Thato: The man who was my mother's boyfriend back then had buried me alive. He is now my mother's husband.

...

I froze.

...

WHAT DID SHE SAY????? BURIED HER ALIVE?????

Chapter 22

[Khumo]

I couldn't believe what I heard. Make it make sense, how can Thato's mother get married to the man who buried her daughter alive? What kind of a mother is Thato's mother? She's cruel. I will deal with her and her husband.

...

Me: Thato, I am very sorry. But why did he do that to you?

Thato: It's a story for another day. I promise to tell you everything soon.

Me: Are you okay?

Thato: I'm really okay and it's all thanks to you. You are very strong so I have been learning a lot from you, Khumo.

Me: I... I am sorry for always being mean to you. I didn't know that you were going through such things. You have always been happy and joking around so I thought that everything was fine with you.

Thato: (Smiles) It is really okay. Don't feel bad. I never stopped liking and loving you. I know how you also protected me openly and secretly throughout my entire school years. You always pretended to be cold when you were young but there was a time when you became cold for real. I believe that whatever you have been through is worse than what I've been through.

...

I wanted to cry and hug Thato but I realized that someone was taking us pictures.

...

Me: Thato, let's talk about this sometime, okay? Please borrow me your phone. I need to call that foolish Aiden.

Thato: Okay.

...

She handed me her phone. I called Aiden.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Aiden: Hey, Thato.

Me: Must you give your number to every female on Earth?

Aiden: Oh... Khumo. Well, Thato is like my little sister so it's really not what you think it is.

Me: Whatever. It doesn't matter. Well, something is wrong. Someone is taking pictures of me outside Thato's house. I think that I was followed this entire time. I always know when people are following me but this time I couldn't tell and it's all because of you.

Aiden: I'm sorry for distracting you. When do you think that they started following you?

Me: I think from home to your house and then to Thato's place.



...

I was really panicking because now it means that whoever followed me around knows that I met Martin Modise so already this is bad.

...

Aiden: I'll take care of it.

Me: Please be fast.

Aiden: Why do you sound worried? You have never felt worried when some people followed you.

Me: This time... uhh... it's different.

Aiden: How??

Me: Aiden, please take care of this. Stop asking me questions.

Aiden: Okay. No problem. Are you at Thato's place?

Me: Yes. Outside. I also met her dad so act fast. I don't want anyone to be in danger.

Aiden: I got your back but you owe me an explanation for panicking about something you've never panicked about.

Me: Bye.

Aiden: I will send you an address. Lead that person to that place and I'll take care of the rest.

Me: Okay. Well, my phone is in my car and I left my car at your place so I'll communicate with you using Thato's phone.

Aiden: Okay. Bye.

...

I hung up.

...

Thato: Is everything okay? Are you in danger?

Me: This is exactly why I didn't want to get close to anyone. Please come with me. I need your phone.

Thato: Where are we going?

Me: Do you trust me?

Thato: I do. I really do.

Me: So come with me. I got the address.

Thato: Do you need a gun?

Me: Huh??

Thato: Do you need a...

Me: I heard you but why are you asking me that question?

Thato: I can tell that something is wrong. You look worried and you don't have your own gun. You had pointed a gun at me earlier but now you are empty handed. You must have left your gun in your car so I will get you a gun.

Me: I...

...

She ran inside the yard.

...

Why was she talking about a gun so easily? Hold on, she didn't look scared when I pointed a gun at her earlier. She had told me that she's not scared of guns and that she has seen guns before. Could her father be exactly like The Smiths and The Jones???? Is my uncle a gangster????

...

Oh, my goodness. Yes, now I remember how those brothers that I killed when I was 8 years old asked me why I'm like my uncle and not like my righteous father. Wow, I am only getting it now. Does it mean that I was worried about my uncle for nothing? (Smiles) Does it mean that he can help me? I only knew that The Smiths are gangsters but I didn't think that my uncle was exactly like them. Could it be that Mr T is also a gangster? I mean, he's friends with The Modises and The Smiths. Or could I be wrong about my uncle? Wow. I will ask Thato. She will not beat around the bush. I know her by now. She'll tell me everything.

...

Thato came out. She was carrying a backpack.

...

Me: What? Did you go inside just to get a backpack?

Thato: There's guns inside the backpack. Let's go.

Me: Guns???? How many????

Thato: I took 4.

...

She grabbed my hand and we began walking.

...

Me: Thato, does your dad know that you own guns?

Thato: Do you want the truth?

Me: Yes. I do.

Thato: I am sure that you know what Aiden does. You are smarter than me so I believe that you know everything by now. I didn't know that The Smiths are gangsters; I only found out when I was 18 years old. My dad is exactly like The Smiths.

Me: Gangster?

Thato: Yes. I wanted to tell you everything about my life years ago but you never gave me a chance. You always tried to push me away.

Me: I'm sorry. I won't do it again.

Thato: Why?

Me: Because... you don't need to know.

Thato: Because you are also like The Smiths and The Modises. I know that you hate The Jones despite living with them.

Me: You know a lot. Aren't you scared that I might hurt you?

...

She shook her head.

Me: Why?

Thato: Why would you hurt me? You've protected me and fought with others for me all these years so why would you hurt me now?

Me: You are truly a nice person. I'm sorry for ever hurting you.

Thato: I was never hurt by you. I have always seen the goodness in you.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. So how do you know that I hate The Jones?

Thato: You, loving Aiden is already a proof. The Jones are enemies with The Modises and The Smiths. I figured it out that you hate The Jones.

Me: How come you never told your dad that I'm his enemy?

Thato: I never mentioned your surname to anyone at home because I realized that my dad hated The Jones so much. I found out that the person who wronged my dad's brother and his entire family members was Mr Jones. I didn't know that you were related to the same Mr Jones but I still didn't want to mention your surname to The Modises and The Smiths to avoid getting you in danger.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. You are truly smart. You and Aiden are the only ones who know that I am Khumo Jones and that I live with your families' enemies. Thank you for protecting me.

Thato: Well, I had to keep my mouth shut because I love you so much and I have heard that you are adopted.

Me: Who told you that I'm adopted?

Thato: Aiden.

Me: Why did he tell you?

Thato: He didn't want me to ever mention your surname to anyone so he told me that you are adopted and that you are a nice person. Well, I was not planning to mention your surname but at least I got to know that Aiden has your back at all times.

Me: (Smiles) I know. Oh, we have arrived.

Thato: That guy still followed us to this place.

Me: I know. He'll meet his end very soon.

Thato: (Smiles) You are so cool. This is really fun. It's like a movie.

...

This foolish Thato though. Everything is fun for her. She's so carefree and I love it. I will definitely repay her for always being nice to me. I will deal with the man who had buried her alive. I will also deal with her mother.

...

I got a text message from Aiden. He was telling me that the guy who followed us was taken care of.

...

Me: Thato, it's done.

Thato: Where is that guy? I don't see him anymore.

Me: That's why I'm telling you that it's done.

Thato: Already? I also wanted to have fun.

Me: Next time. Let's get out of here.

...

We were about to leave when Aiden came to us.

...

Thato: Aiden, where is he? I was ready to teach him a lesson for my friend.

Aiden: (Giggles) What can you possibly do?

Thato: My family and your family taught me how to fight and protect myself. I was going to...

Aiden: That guy is more powerful than you. Stay out of danger. Go home with my driver. I want to talk to Khumo.

Me: I have nothing to talk to you about.

Aiden: But you owe me an explanation.

Me: I don't. Leave me al...

...

All of a sudden some people started shooting at us. We hid behind this other building.

...

Aiden: What?? How are they here??

Me: Who are they??

Aiden: Njabulo's men and... Njabulo himself. Didn't you see your boyfriend, Njabulo?

Me: How could I see Njabulo when I ran for my life? Stop it.

Aiden: (Giggles) Well, he's here. I saw him.

Me: And what about the guy who had followed us here?

Aiden: He's Johnny's guy. Don't worry about him. He was following you because Johnny wanted to abduct you. The Jones does not suspect you at all. Johnny acted with only his men. Dean Jones is in the dark.

Me: I will deal with Johnny later but are you aware that this mess was created by you? Njabulo's men are here because of you.

Aiden: I... I am sorry.

Thato: Who is Njabulo?

Aiden: It's a long story.

...

We could hear Njabulo talking from the other side of the building.

...

Njabulo: Aiden, give my wife to me and I'll let you go.

Aiden: When did she become your wife? Are you losing it?

Njabulo: Aiden Smith, I am warning you.

Me: Njabulo, leave us alone. I really don't want to hurt you.

Njabulo: (Laughs) How can you possibly hurt me?

Aiden: Don't underestimate her. She's really capable of getting rid of you. We are hiding because you sneak attacked us and because we don't want to kill you.

Njabulo: Do you know who I am? I'm Njabulo and I'm not scared of anyone.

Me: We are also not scared of you.

Njabulo: So why are you hiding?

Me: I will come out. But please don't shoot. I really don't want to hurt you.

Njabulo: You already hurt me by double crossing me.

Me: I didn't double cross you.

Njabulo: I heard everything you said to Aiden. Do you think that I'm stupid? You obviously gave your virginity to him by now.

Me: I didn't. I'm sorry for hurting you. You are really...

...

And all of a sudden we heard gunshots. BAM BAM BAM BAM!!!!  
What just happened?? Who got shot??

...

Me: Njabulo, are you okay?

...

He came running to the other side of the building. We didn't act because we could tell that he was not trying to hurt us and that he was running from someone.

...

Me: What happened? Who got shot?

Njabulo: We need to get out of here. Johnny himself is here. I shot some of his men and came here. He has my men though. It was a sneak attack.

Me: Johnny?? Which Johnny??

Njabulo: The one you know. Your uncle.

Me: That's bad. How will I explain the fact that I am with a Smith and a Modise right now?

Njabulo: That's why you should not get caught at all. We should make sure that we get out of here and hide. I know that you hate The Jones because of what they did to your family. You have to be alive in order to make The Jones pay. That's why I came here. I didn't come here to

fight. I came here to warn you about Johnny's plans so I had to act like I was against you because I realized that Johnny was following me.

Me: What?? Do you know me??

Njabulo: Yes. I know you, Camilla Modise.

Thato & Aiden: WHAT???? CAMILLA MODISE????

## Chapter 23

[Aiden]

What is going on here? Is Khumo really the person that we have been looking for?? Mr Martin and all his friends and allies never stopped looking for this girl. Am I that stupid or just too slow?? I should've known from the beginning. I should've known when she killed those guys when she was just 8 years old. I remember how the other guy asked why Khumo is not righteous like her father but exactly like her uncle. I should've known when they said that Maya Jones replaced Khumo. Oh, my goodness, I am really stupid. Now I really feel bad. I truly should've known.

...

Thato: What is going on here? What are you saying? Is she really Camilla Modise?

Njabulo: Yes, she is. Let's all get inside the building and find a spot to hide. Johnny and his men will soon find us if we don't hide.

Me: Can't we just run away from where Johnny and his men are not guarding?

Njabulo: Johnny is not stupid. He knows exactly what he is doing. He will capture us the moment we try to escape so the best thing to do right now is to go inside the building and hide.

Me: But we don't trust you. You...

...

Khumo grabbed Thato's backpack and walked inside the building. I looked at Thato and we followed Khumo. Well, we went inside the building only because of Khumo. It has nothing to do with Njabulo.

...

Njabulo also went in with us. He better not be playing us. Well, I trust Khumo. I'm only inside because I trust her.

...

The building was pretty huge. We found a spot to hide. Thato looked at Njabulo.

...

Thato: Njabulo, what is going on here?

Njabulo: What do you mean?

Thato: You fired shots immediately when you got here. Why is it now you want us to think that you are a good person?

Me: Exactly. I also don't know what he's trying to do.

Njabulo: To be honest with you, I did that immediately when I arrived because I wanted you people to hide so that the person who was following me does not get to see you at all.

Me: But you began talking and even asked for your wife. You even called me by my name and surname.

Njabulo: I could see where Johnny was. He was still a little far from me. I know that he didn't get a clear picture of everything. He may have seen from afar that I was shooting at some people but he definitely did not hear anything. I shot some of Johnny's men the moment Johnny got out of the car and signaled his men to kill me. Aiden, I know that you and I are enemies but be honest, we never fought physically. We are just always fighting with words. How can I possibly want to kill you and your loved ones?

Me: Yes, you and I are good enemies but it's not easy to trust you.

Thato: Exactly. How do you know Khumo's real identity if you are not a bad person?

Njabulo: Thato, you shouldn't even be here. Your father does not want you involved in things like this.

Thato: Do you know me? Is there anyone you don't know?

Njabulo: Yes, I know you. I...

...

We could hear Johnny talking from outside the building.

...



Johnny: NJABULO, COME OUT OR THINGS WON'T GO WELL FOR YOU!!!!

Njabulo: YOU ARE MAKING NOISE. WHY DO YOU WANT TO KILL ME SO BAD?

Johnny: YOU KNOW THINGS THAT YOU SHOULDN'T KNOW. YOU HAVE TO DIE!!

...

I looked at Njabulo and spoke.

...

Me: Hold on, so is Johnny really here for you or here for Khumo?

Njabulo: It's what I've been trying to say. Trust me on this one. Johnny is only here for me. He followed me here. I only realized when it was late that Johnny was following me. He is not here for Khumo and he doesn't know that Khumo is here.

Thato: How come he doesn't know?

Me: Yes, how come he doesn't know? His man was here and he was following Khumo.

Njabulo: I know but his man had not yet said anything to him. You got rid of his man, didn't you? He didn't get the chance to report back to Johnny but if Johnny finds out that Khumo is also here, he will definitely take her away because he really wants to abduct her. Right now, he doesn't know that Khumo is here plus Khumo's car is not here so Khumo is very safe.

Thato: Who are you, Njabulo?

Njabulo: I work for your father but also works for The Jones.

Me: What do you mean?

Njabulo: Let me officially introduce myself. Hi, I am Njabulo. I am the person who told Martin about his brother and his brother's family years ago. I work for Martin but pretending to be loyal to The Jones. I'm actually a spy and there's nothing I wouldn't do for Martin.

Me: How should we know that? I used to think that I knew you but clearly I was wrong.

Njabulo: Why should you know a spy? Do you think that professional spies would just give themselves away just like that?

Me: So why are you giving yourself away right now?

Njabulo: Because it is needed. I don't want any of you to doubt me.

Me: I still don't trust you. You had said that you'll kill Khumo then kill me. Do you think that I forgot about what you said on the phone?

Njabulo: I had to say that. You don't know the situation I was in. My phone was wired.

Me: You came prepared, didn't you? I don't trust you at all. You are lying to us.

Khumo: I trust him. He had said what he had said because his phone was wired. He truly works for Mr Martin. He can be trusted.

...

We all looked at Khumo.

Me: And how would you know that? Is that why you have been quiet? Were you still thinking of how to save Njabulo?

Khumo: I just hacked Thato's father's phone, using Thato's phone. I was able to see what I needed to see.

Thato: What?? Is that even possible? Nobody can hack my dad's things. You are the first person in life to hack into my dad's things.

Njabulo: (Smiles) That's why she's Camilla Modise. She can do what others can not do. You are right, she's the first person to succeed in hacking into Martin's things.

Me: What on earth is going on here? Can Njabulo really be trusted?

Khumo: Yes.

Me: What if he's wired right now just like his phone?

Njabulo: I left my phone in my car.

Me: And what about you? What if you are wired?

Njabulo: I'm not.

Me: You...

Khumo: He's not.

Me: And how do you know?

Khumo: Not only did I hack Thato's father's phone, I also hacked into one of my computers using Thato's phone. I was able to check Njabulo's background. There's nothing that I can't look into. I believe that I know Njabulo by now. He's truly innocent and loyal to Mr Martin.

Thato: Wow, Khumo. You are truly smart. I can't believe that you just accessed your computer without even touching your computer.

Khumo: That's why I was quiet this entire time. I was busy. I was going to kill Njabulo myself if I had found out that he can't be trusted. I don't like killing innocent people so I had to be sure that Njabulo is innocent.

Me: But how come nobody ever told me about him? Could it be that I'm not trusted enough?

Njabulo: You don't need to be told everything, Aiden. Well, I know for sure that Martin has mentioned me to Thato before.

Thato: Yes, now that I think about it, you are right. He has. He mentioned you to me years ago. He had told me that he trusts you and that you would never betray him.

Me: And why was I not told anything? And why did you date Khumo? When did you realize that she's Camilla?

Khumo: Aiden, it's not time for such questions right now. Don't forget that our enemies are outside, waiting to kill us.

...

Khumo knelt down before Njabulo.

...

Khumo: I am truly sorry. Your family have suffered because of my family but you still remained loyal to my uncle. I feel so bad. Please forgive me.

Njabulo: I don't blame you for anything. Believe me on this one. Leo was my best friend and your family did a lot for my family.

Me: What are you talking about now? Who is Leo?

Khumo: My brother. Leo was my brother. After hacking into my computer and into my uncle's phone, I was able to find out that Njabulo was my brother's best friend.

Me: But how come you never knew him?

Khumo: He lived abroad until three months before my family was murdered. My brother used to talk about him a lot but Njabulo's name was different back then. Some of my family members had met Njabulo before.

Me: I see. Please get up. You can't kneel down before others.

...

Khumo looked at me.

...

Me: What is it?

Khumo: Do you want to know Njabulo's real identity?

Me: Uhh... please don't tell me that he's my brother. He can't be my long lost brother, right?

Khumo: He's not your brother. He is Aunt Letty's son. Do you remember when Aunt Letty stopped us from saving her family years ago? I was stubborn so she ended up telling me why her family members was treated bad by The Jones. The money that Aunt Letty and her entire family members protected with their everything is actually taken care of by Njabulo. Njabulo took his father's job and took care of my family's accounts. The Jones does not know that Njabulo is Aunt Letty's son and that he's actually the one who is taking care of The Modises' money.

Me: Wow, so are you telling me that this idiot is actually a good person?

Khumo: Yes, he is. He suffered a lot. Think about what he went through.

Me: Well, I feel for him but I still don't like him.

Njabulo: The feeling is mutual. I would never like somebody like you.

Me: I don't care.

Njabulo: And do I care? What a fool.

Thato: The two of you are childish. You'll fight later. Let's get out of here. Oh, let's text my dad with my phone. He'll come to the rescue.

...

Khumo smirked.

...

Khumo: No. I got this. This building is actually mine. I built it specially and specifically for Johnny. I didn't know that he'd bring himself here. I should carry out what I've been planning.

Me: What?? Your building?? But the doors are locked. The only door that we were able to open was the one we used to get in.

Khumo: I am the one who unlocked the door and led the way. You were all talking and not paying attention to me. I unlocked the door when no one looked. There's a secret room in this building. It has all kinds of weapons. Johnny must die. I already texted Thato's father with Thato's phone. He will come here with his men very soon.

Njabulo: (Smiles) You are truly your father's child. You are so intelligent and I love how you plan ahead.

Khumo: You better take care of yourself. I have so many questions for you. I still need to know how you know my real identity. Yes, you work for both The Jones and The Modises but I have never exposed myself. I need to know how you figured it out.

Njabulo: (Smiles) Take us to the weapons. Let's make Johnny pay.

Me: (Laughs) I'm loving this. I love this kind of adrenaline.

Thato: (Smiles) I can finally get to have some fun.

## Chapter 24

[Khumo]

I still can't believe that Aiden, Thato and Njabulo know that I'm Camilla. I really hate this because I feel like it's not easy to focus when there are so many people who know the real me. I used to do a very clean job so I wonder if I'll be able to do it again now that these fools know the real me.

...

I was about to lead everyone to the secret room, blindfolded when we suddenly heard gunshots.

...

Aiden: Khumo, are you okay? Who's shooting? Should we remove the blindfolds?

Me: Yes. Something is happening outside.

...

They removed the blindfolds. We all rushed to the window to see what was happening.

...

Thato: That's Aiden's dad himself.

Me: Why is he here? I texted your fa...

Njabulo: Martin is also here.

Me: They came too early and ruined everything.

Njabulo: I think that they were already coming here even before they got your text.

Me: How? Why? Did you say something to them?

Njabulo: How? I forgot my phone in the car.

Me: So how are they here so early?

Thato: Uhm, my dad might have noticed that I stole the guns and tracked my location. My phone might have given them my location. My location is always turned on for safety reasons.

Me: Well, you have a lovely father who would go out looking for you immediately after you've stolen guns. You are lucky.

...

Aiden pointed.

...

Aiden: Look over there. Behind the the biggest tree. That's Mr Jones himself.

Njabulo: The biggest monster is behind the biggest tree. I truly hate The Jones.

...

I freaked out a little. Mr Jones is also here so I wonder if I made a mistake by texting my uncle. Mr Jones is really powerful and I really don't want to lose my loved ones.

...

Me: That can't be good.

Thato: Are you not mad at me, Khumo?

Me: No. I'm not. It's okay. I guess it's not yet Johnny's time to die plus I hate acting without thinking. Today I ended up wanting to kill Johnny because he came here on his own. I was too impulsive. For me to do a clean job, I must never make such a mistake again.

Njabulo: You are right. We all didn't think about it. Killing one of The Jones needs proper planning.

Me: Exactly my point. I do believe that we were going to succeed in killing him but I think cleaning up was going to be a problem. Clearly Mr Jones came here for Johnny and he obviously brought backup so had we killed Johnny, it was going to be over for us.

Aiden: You have a point. We all need someone like you. You are good at everything, including good at thinking and planning.

Me: Of course I am but with you guys around, nothing is easy. I don't like having to look out for other people when I want to get rid of someone that's why I prefer doing things on my own.

Njabulo: Please forgive us. We will do better next time.

Me: Next time? What next time? Who said that I want to work with anyone?

Aiden: But you have been working with me all these years.

Me: I didn't involve you in everything. You still don't know that I have secret rooms that's why you were also blindfolded when I was leading all of you to the secret room in this building.

Aiden: You are mean. Well, we are going nowhere.

Njabulo: This time I agree with Aiden even though I don't like him.

Thato: But Khumo, how can we possibly let you deal with everything alone especially after knowing your real identity? Do you know how tirelessly The Smiths and The Modises have been looking for you?

Please let us in. We want to help.

...

I just rolled my eyes and kept quiet.

...

Aiden: I wonder where Mr T is when everyone is here.

Me: Should we also help them?

Aiden: No. They got this.

Njabulo: I think that Mr T is their backup. He might be hiding somewhere with more men and Thato's brothers.

...

Did Njabulo just say Thato's brothers? Now I'm a little scared.

Everyone is involved and I wonder if they'll be safe.

...

Aiden: It makes sense. I can't believe that a fool like you also know Mr T.

Njabulo: I actually know more than you. I also know who Mr T really is.

Aiden: Who is Mr T? What do you know that I don't know?

Njabulo: I am not telling you anything. I'm a professional spy.

Aiden: How annoying can you get? Can Mr T really be trusted?

Njabulo: Duh!!

Aiden: Don't "duh" me. You said that you know who he "really" is so it means that there's more to him.

Njabulo: Of course there's more. Just keep quiet.

Me: The two of you are truly annoying. Just keep quiet. You talk too much.

...

Gun bullets were literally flying in the air. It was a mess and only the weakest got shot. The real enemies were still standing and going.

...

I got a text on Thato's phone. It reads "The Jones are now distracted. We killed their lapdogs especially the ones that were guarding all doors. You may go through the back door. Help will be waiting for you on that side. Don't worry about Aiden and Njabulo's cars. Just leave and be safe."

...

I told everyone about the message and we did as told. We were all taken to Aiden's house. I finally got hold of my phone and my car key.

...

Me: I hate this feeling of being helped by others and running away. What if they need our help?

Aiden: Don't worry. They will be okay.

Me: But Mr Jones is really powerful. What if he had hidden an entire army out there to take down The Smiths and The Modises?

Njabulo: Mr T is actually more powerful than all The Smiths, all The Jones and all The Modises combined. Trust me on this one. Mr T owns the army himself. He planned for years. The Jones are going down soon and with your help, The Jones will go down sooner.

Me: Is Mr T that powerful? Is there actually someone more powerful than The Jones, The Smiths and The Modises?

...

He smiled and nodded.

...

Me: I like Mr T even though I have not met him. He sounds like my cup of tea.

Aiden: Heyyy, what about me?



Me: Nobody can replace you at all.

Aiden: (Smiles) Njabulo, did you hear that?

Njabulo: You are truly childish.

Aiden: Isn't your heart hurting?

Njabulo: Not at all. I know that what I did was wrong. I don't love Khumo in a romantic way. I have a wife and two children.

Thato: WHAAAAAAAAAT????

Njabulo: I'm serious. I do.

Thato: It means that you cheated on your wife with Khumo.

Njabulo: Trust me. I didn't. I love my wife so much. I can never cheat on her.

Thato: But you kissed Khumo, slept...

Njabulo: Not at all. We never slept together.

Aiden: But you bragged about sleeping with her.

Njabulo: To annoy you.

Thato: But the two of you obviously kissed and behaved like a couple.

Njabulo: Yes, we did. But we only kissed. My wife knows everything. I had told her all about my plan before approaching Khumo.

Aiden: Your wife is a fool. How could she allow you to get close to another woman? Khumo is extremely beautiful. Your wife is crazy.

Njabulo: I got close to Khumo because I suspected that she might be the person who was replaced by Maya Jones years ago. I wanted to protect her at all times and find out if she was really Camilla Modise so I stepped on your toes, Aiden. I apologize for that.

Aiden: Huh? Did you just apologize?

Njabulo: What is wrong with you? Fine. I take back my apology so...

Aiden: No, no, no. Don't take it back. I like it.

Thato: These two though.

Me: They should just get married.

Thato: I agree with you. They are always bickering.

Me: Njabulo, how did you figure out that I'm Camilla?

Njabulo: You...

Thato: Hold on, how come dad never noticed you, Khumo?

Me: Because the face you see right now is a fake face. My real face is underneath this face.

Thato: Really? Are you serious? I mean...you look real... no, the face looks real.

Me: I know. It looks extremely real. It doesn't come off until I take it out myself. I shower with it, swim with it and do many things with it but it will never fall off and expose me. It can only be removed with a certain liquid.

Thato: Do you mind showing your real face to us?

Me: I don't want to scare Aiden. What if I have a big scar on my real face?

Aiden: Who cares?? I would still love you.

Me: Mhmm. I see. Well, I don't have the the remover of the fake face with me right now so maybe some other time. Let's continue this conversation some other time. I got a text from my mom...Mrs Jones. She said that I should come home immediately because it's urgent.

Aiden: Do you have to go home?

Me: I have to. Sorry. Thato, I'm also taking your phone with me. I used it to hack into my private computer so it has to die. It knows a lot.

Thato: But I love that phone. I...

...

I walked out. Got in my car and drove home.

## Chapter 25

[Mrs Jones]

My baby just arrived and I was so happy and relieved. I hugged her.

...

Me: Are you okay? I was so worried about you.

Khumo: Mom, what's wrong?

Me: Your dad was shot so I had to tell you to come back home immediately.

Khumo: Dd... what did you say?

Me: Yes, dear. He's at the hospital right now.

...

Khumo broke down. I know how much she loves us as her parents. She also respects us and care so much about us.

...

Kelsy: Mom, will dad be okay?

Me: I hope so.

Khumo: So shouldn't we be at the hospital right now?

Kelsy: Dummy, we were waiting for you because you are more emotional than us. You were not going to be able to drive after hearing the news.

Khumo: I am sorry for being a bad daughter, mom. I didn't mean to be out for so long.

Me: No, my baby. It's okay. You did nothing wrong. May, Daniel and Oliver have landed. They are already at the hospital. We will find them there.

...

She wiped away her tears.

...

Khumo: That's good. Let's go.

Me: Okay. Do you need anything?

Kelsy: Mom, stop it. Khumo is not in need of anything. We should only worry about dad right now.

Me: Let's go.

...

We left the house.

...

I don't know how I'll explain everything to Khumo. She doesn't know anything about our family so Dean was shot. How do I explain all of this to Khumo?

...

[At The Hospital]

[Khumo]

We finally arrived at the hospital and May was not happy to see me at all. Oliver and Daniel were obviously pretending but May was making it obvious that she still doesn't like me even after she had lived in Canada for so long. Johnny's family members also arrived at the hospital. I was surrounded by my enemies but who cares? I am safe as long as I don't get myself exposed. I honestly trust Njabulo, Thato and Aiden. Those three would never expose me to The Jones.

...

Hold on, everyone is here. Where is Johnny????

...

Me: Mom, where is Uncle Johnny?

Sarah: I don't know. I heard that he was with your dad when your dad got shot.

Arabella: Really? So why is dad not here? What happened to him?

Sarah: Don't worry. Everyone is looking for him. He will be found soon.

...

Where could Johnny be? I hope he's not up to something wherever he is. I still need to deal with that jerk. He better be safe wherever he is. And... how did Mr Jones end up getting shot? This is really fun. Isn't Mr Jones more powerful than everyone? I'm shocked but also very happy.

...

[Few Minutes Later]

The doctor told us that Mr Jones is in a very critical condition. I couldn't believe it. How did things change so soon? What if Mr Jones is up to something? I mean, he is powerful and gets support from other powerful people so how can he easily end up in the hospital?

...

I stepped outside to make a call to Aiden.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Aiden: Hey, Wife.

Me: Aiden, Mr Jones was shot.

Aiden: I know. He deserves it.

Me: Who shot him?

Aiden: He was shot by Mr T and Thato's brothers. I heard that he was shot 3 times. Instead of helping, Johnny ran away.

Me: Really? Did Mr T make his appearance when we left?

Aiden: Yes, that's what one of our people told us.

Me: Wow. Did you say that Johnny ran away?

Aiden: Not anymore. Well, yes. He had decided to run for his life but later was caught.

Me: Caught?

Aiden: Yes.

Me: By?

Aiden: I am yet to find out but I suspect Mr T and Thato's brothers.

Me: Aiden, I want to meet Mr T.

Aiden: Do you really want to meet him?

Me: Yes, I do.

Aiden: But why?

Me: Because I like him a lot.

Aiden: How do you like someone you have not met?

Me: It's possible. I have a good feeling about him. I can't be wrong.

Aiden: Well, Njabulo told me who Mr T really is. You might want to also kill Mr T after finding out who he is so I am sorry. I can't tell you anything.

Me: Hold on, is he my enemy?

Aiden: Wife, let it be.

Me: You are annoying. I want to meet Mr T.

Aiden: You will meet him soon.

Me: Do you promise?

Aiden: I do. Just promise me that you won't hate him.

Me: Why would I hate him? He's not the one who killed my family.

Aiden: I know but he... I need to take another call. Let's talk later, okay?

Me: Fine.

Aiden: I love you.

Me: I don't love you. I'm still mad at you. Bye.

Aiden: Hey, but...

...

I hung up on him.

...

I was about to walk back in when someone grabbed my hand. I turned around.

...

Me: Who are you? Let go of my hand.

Him: Khumo, we finally meet.

Me: Who are you?

Him: (Smiles) My name is Liam. I'm a huge fan of yours.

Me: Huh?

Him: Instagram. I follow you on Instagram.

Me: Oh, I see. Well, this is not a perfect timing. I need to go back inside. My dad is not doing okay at all.

Him: Okay. See you.

...

He let go of my hand and went in. What a weirdo. What was that all about??

...

I went to get drinks for everyone and went back to the waiting room. I was shocked when I found my "huge fan" with everyone. He was introduced as May's boyfriend and I was not shocked. He made me feel uncomfortable outside so there should be something about him. I don't trust him.

...

May pulled me aside.

...

May: Why was my boyfriend staring at you?

...

Wait, is she actually being serious right now?? Is she not asking the wrong person?? Why not ask her boyfriend??

...

Me: I don't know.

May: Stay away from my boyfriend.

Me: I am not interested in your boyfriend. My boyfriend is way better than your boyfriend.

May: Are you talking about Kelsy's boyfriend? I heard that you seduced Kelsy's boyfriend, Aiden.

Me: (Chuckles) Isn't Kelsy happily married? How is Aiden her boyfriend?

May: Can't she have both a husband and a boyfriend?

Me: Does her husband know that she's obsessed with Aiden?

May: You better keep your mouth shut.

Me: I am not interested in saying anything to Kelsy's husband but stop treating me like a b\*tch unless you want me to really be one. I can take all your partners without even trying too much.

May: (Yells) HOW DARE YOU????

...

I started crying because I realized that everyone was looking at us.

...

Me: May, how could you say horrible things to me at a time like this? Dean Jones is also my dad so why are you hurting me with words and yelling at me just because I refused to leave the hospital?

May: Wh... what?

...

"Mom" came closer.

...

Sarah: May, how can you ask Khumo to leave the hospital? Why are you always fighting with Khumo?

May: Mom, I didn't...

...

I cried even more.

...

Me: Mom, she was so horrible to me. I'm really hurt.

May: Khumo, you are ly...

Sarah: May, leave the hospital right now. You are getting on my nerves.

Me: No, mom. I will be the one to leave. May will never accept me.

Sarah: You are not going anywhere. May should be the one to leave.

May, go home right now.

May: Mom, I didn't...

Sarah: MAY????

...

May was fuming. She got her things and left. Her boyfriend followed her.

...

[Two Hours Later]

I got a call from a number I don't know. I stepped out to take the call.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hello...?

Caller: I got Johnny. Would you like to torture him yourself or should I do it for you?

Me: Excuse me? I don't know what you are talking about.

Caller: There's no need to pretend when talking to me. I know everything.

Me: Who are you and what exactly do you know?

Caller: Oh, please forgive my manners. My name is Mr T... Tony Jones.

Me: What did you say?

Caller: I am Tony Jones. Dean Jones' brother. He wronged me years ago so I'm back for revenge. I want us to help one another.

Me: WHAAAAAAAAAT??????

...

How many people know everything about me now?? This can't be good. So the so called Mr T is actually Mr Jones' brother?? But how?? Didn't Mr Jones lose his two brothers because of Mr Smith years ago?? I am feeling uneasy. Why am I slowly getting exposed?? What exactly did I do wrong?? This is exactly why I didn't want to get close to anyone. This is exactly why I wanted to do everything on my own. How did this happen????

## Chapter 26

[Mr T]

Why is she quiet? Did she hear me??

...

Me: Hello?? Are you there??

Khumo: Who on earth are you? I don't trust you at all. I would never do anything to The Jones.

Me: I love that about you. You are smart.

Khumo: Bye.

Me: Please hold on.

Khumo: What is it?

Me: Please trust me. I would never do anything to hurt you.



Khumo: Why should I trust you? You even changed your voice. What exactly are you using right now to change your voice?

Me: Oh, you are truly smart. I am impressed. You were able to tell that I changed my voice.

Khumo: Mr Man, what do you want from me?

Me: I really have Johnny and I caught him only for you.

Khumo: For me? Why would you do things for me? And who said that I would want to hurt my uncle? You have the wrong person.

Me: You don't trust me. I understand so please come to me with Aiden.

Khumo: If you dare touch My Aiden, I will kill you. I don't trust you at all and I don't know what you are talking about. Stay away from me.

You have the wrong person.

...

She hung up on me.

...

I looked at Aiden.

...

Me: How old are you? Aren't you too old to be dating her?

Aiden: Uhh... Mr T. What did she say?

Me: She passed the test. She is very smart. She didn't admit to anything or give herself away.

Aiden: Why did you want to test her?

Me: To see if she can be trusted. Didn't you beg me to help her out? She's very smart so I don't mind working with her.

Aiden: But who are you? You and Njabulo lied to me. You are not Dean's brother, right?

Me: (Smiles) I am Njabulo's father in-law. I am your father's best friend. I am Martin's...

Aiden: You know exactly what I'm talking about. Why do you want get rid of The Jones so bad?

Me: I thought that you already know.

Aiden: Yes, I know that they have wronged you before but I feel like it's deeper than that.

Me: I am really Dean's brother.

Aiden: But you don't look like him.

Me: Why should I look like that monster?

Aiden: Mhmm. So what will you do to Johnny?

Me: Khumo should torture Johnny. I don't want Johnny to die yet. Death is an easy punishment for him.

Aiden: You are right.

Me: Don't worry. I will never let him go. I have a brilliant plan.

Aiden: I trust you even though I feel like you are keeping some things from me.

Me: (Smiles) Good. Do you think that Thato is strong enough to finally face Johnny?

Aiden: Thato? What am I missing here?

Me: How come you don't know? Johnny had buried Thato alive years ago when Thato was still young.

Aiden: Are you serious?

Me: How come you don't know? Martin said it to us so many times. Do you ever pay attention or are you just a puppy in love?

Aiden: (Smiles) Don't tease me.

Me: Go get your girlfriend. She doesn't trust me, which is a good thing so bring her over.

Aiden: Why is it a good thing that she doesn't trust you?

Me: She won't be easily fooled by anybody.

Aiden: Oh, but did you have to use me like that?

Me: How did I use you?

Aiden: I am the one who told you what to say to her, remember? She must be freaking out by now. She obviously believes that you know everything about her... by that time you don't know anything.

Me: Is she hiding something? Is there something I should know? I only know that she doesn't like The Jones. Is there more to know?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Aiden????

Aiden: No.

Me: Who is she? Why would she hate The Jones so much and eat them from inside?

Aiden: I am not telling you anything.

Me: I will find out on my own.

Aiden: Trust me. You won't.

Me: Is she that good at hiding things?

Aiden: Very good. I also got a shock of my life today.

Me: Mhmm. Interesting. I like her. She's my cup of tea.

Aiden: She said the same thing about you.

Me: (Smiles) Did she? I should just get her married to my son, don't you think?

Aiden: And I will kill all your sons.

Me: (Laughs) Do you love her that much?

Aiden: I do.

Me: You told me that she's Thato's friend. Thato is 22 years old. Is Khumo also 22 years old?

Aiden: Yes. Is it wrong?

Me: No, Old Man. Age is just a number.

Aiden: Heyyyyyyy????? Old Man?????

...

I just laughed.

...

I love teasing Aiden. I like him a lot. I have two sons and two daughters.

All my daughters are married. I would love to have a son-in-law like

Aiden. He's very vocal about his feelings and he's genuine and loyal.

Me: Aiden, why did you suddenly decide to tell me about Khumo Jones today?

Aiden: What you did to The Jones today left me scared. Khumo is a Jones but she is nothing like all The Jones. I know that you and everyone else wants to get rid of all The Jones so I just had to tell you that the person I love is also a Jones. I really can't lose her.

Me: I see. You did good by telling me. We were really going to hurt her once we get all the pictures.

Aiden: All the pictures? What pictures?

Me: Pictures of all The Jones and everyone working for them.

Aiden: Why didn't anybody tell me?

Me: We didn't know that you are close to someone who lives with The Jones. Your father and Martin are still in the dark.

Aiden: Well, please tell them about Khumo for me. You know how stubborn they are. I don't want them to hurt her.

Me: Okay. I will save your lover for you.

Aiden: (Smiles) Thank you. Please act fast before everyone gets pictures.

Me: I got you.

Aiden: Why did Johnny bury Thato alive? How come he did that? I am lost.

Me: Ask Thato or Martin. I didn't tell you to be in love and forget about other things.

Aiden: Must you always be like this? You are so annoying. Bye.

Me: (Giggles) Bye. Make sure that you are not followed.

Aiden: Got that. Actually I will bring Khumo tomorrow. It's already late. I don't want anyone to suspect her.

Me: No problem.

...

He left.

...

Dean and Johnny, your worst enemy is back. I have planned to take you down for years now and trust me, with that smart girl working with me, you won't be able to escape. But... who is she?? Yes, I acted like someone who knows everything about Khumo when I called her because Aiden had told me what to say but now I'm curious. Well, anybody who is enemies with The Jones is my friend. With Dean Jones hospitalized, who can challenge me?? His entire family is next.

...

[The Next Day]

[Khumo]

Everyone was at the hospital except for Daniel and Oliver. They suddenly wanted to bully me as I was about to walk out of the house.

...

Daniel: Where do you think you are going after what you did to May last night?

...

He pushed me but I was able to stand my ground. I did not fall at all.

...

Me: Daniel, what is wrong with you?

Oliver: What do you mean? Mom chased May out of the hospital last night all because of you.

Me: Is that why you want to bully me? Things have changed now. I am no longer the same girl you beat up years ago. I can take care of myself.

...

They both laughed.

...

Me: What's funny?

Daniel: You are funny.

...

I attempted to leave but they both stood in front of me.

...

Me: You are really working on my nerves. Oliver, you are 34 years old and you Daniel, are 32 years old. Do you seriously feel good bullying someone who is just 22 years old?

Oliver: Oh, do you want us to give it to you then?

Me: Wha... what are you talking about?

Daniel: Are you not old enough to understand? Be our toy and we will let you leave.

Me: Toy?

Daniel: Yes, let us both enjoy you and we...

...

I slapped him. Do they think that I'm scared of them? They attempted to take off my clothes and I got extremely angry and fought with them. We were fighting then suddenly Daniel attempted to hit me with a flower vase so I acted fast. I was able to dodge and the one who was behind me got hit by the vase. Yes, Oliver was hit by the glass vase and immediately hit the ground. That vase was extremely strong, it can hurt anyone... strong or weak.

...

Daniel: Do you see what you have done?

Me: What have I done?

Daniel: I will tell everyone that you did this.

Me: They won't believe you. They know that I am a good person.

Daniel: Trust me. They will believe me. I have my way.

...

He ran to the footage/control room. I could tell that he was going to try his best to frame me so I had to save myself. I ran to my bedroom and locked it. I went to the secret room, got hold of the original footage, sent the video to my phone then to my "mom". How could I simply allow Daniel to frame me?

...

I ran back to where Oliver was lying on the floor. There was so much blood on the floor. Daniel also came back and took Oliver to his car. I followed him.

...

Daniel: Where do you think you are going?

Me: I am going with you. Aren't you taking him to the hospital?

Daniel: Stay out of this.

...

Truly speaking, I didn't want to go with him but because cameras were on, I had to act like I was worried so that I can still be seen as the good daughter.

...

Me: Let's go. I'm going with you. Oliver is also my brother and I love him despite everything.

Daniel: You are not going anywhere.

Voice: You are also not going to any hospital, Daniel.

...

We turned around and looked at the person who was talking. He had so many people with him and they were all armed.

...

Daniel: Who do you think you are?? Do you know who I am?? Do you know who my father is??

...

That man did not waste time. He shot Daniel. I was so shocked and scared. I didn't have a plan to save myself as everything happened right where I live and happened so fast. I didn't think that anybody could come inside the yard without being let in by a family member or the security guard. Will I also get shot right now? Who is this man and how did he get in the yard with his people??

## Chapter 27

[Mr T]

She... is she Khumo?? She... oh, my goodness. Could I be dreaming or overthinking?? She... she... what is going on here??

...

I went closer to her and I could tell that she was scared.

...

Me: Khumo, don't worry. I won't hurt you.

Khumo: You just shot my brother, why should I believe you?

Me: (Laughs) What?? Brother??

Khumo: Sir, please don't kill me. You may kill me later but not now. I'm not ready to die.

Me: Did you hear me?? I said that I won't kill you.

Khumo: So what do you want?

Me: Your family is what I want.

Khumo: My family is very nice. Why would someone like you want them?

...

Okay, Khumo. I see what you are doing. I will help you act. No one should ever suspect you. The cameras are on and I'm not planning to destroy them at all. I want The Jones to see this moment and hear everything.

...

I instructed my men to take Daniel and Oliver away. I pointed a gun at Khumo because I didn't want anyone to suspect her. This will look like I abducted her.

...

Me: Hands up and move.

Khumo: (Cries) What do you want from me? I don't know you.

Me: Just move.

...

I forced her into the car. We left.

...

[Khumo]

When the car drove through the gate, I could see the security guard lying on the ground. He was in a pool of his own blood. He must have gotten shot when he opened the gate. Well, I have finally figured out that this man is Mr T. I mean, no one can be brutal like him. He shot Daniel without any hesitation so he must be Mr T.

...

I had to act in order to protect Mr T; I just didn't want to end up saying something that would put him in trouble. I also had to act because the cameras were on and I didn't want to be suspected. Well, I realized that one of Mr T's men is actually someone who works for The Jones.

...

Could it be that The Jones know about Mr T? I mean, why else would someone who works for them be with Mr T right now? This guy is obviously a spy and he's bad news for Mr T. I will teach him a lesson. I like Mr T so much; there's something about him that makes me happy and comfortable. I am meeting him for the first time and I feel really good. I also believe that anyone who is enemies with The Jones is my friend.

...

I continued to act on our way to wherever Mr T was taking me to.

...

[Mr T]

I can't be wrong. It's her. It's really her. I can't believe that she was so close to me all this time. She has grown so much. I am so shocked.

...

We arrived at my warehouse and told my men to guard outside. I took Khumo in.

...



Me: Why does your phone keep on ringing?

Khumo: It's my mom.

Me: You are a good actor.

Khumo: And you are a fool, Mr Tony.

Me: (Smiles) Oh, do you know me? That's interesting.

Khumo: You are the only brutal person I've been told about.

Me: Trust me, I never wanted to be brutal. I was forced to.

Khumo: Then watch your back, Old Man.

Me: What do you mean?

Khumo: Is there anyone else around?

Me: No. Yes.

Khumo: Huh??

Me: Yes, Johnny is around but I've kept him in the basement so we are alone right now.

Khumo: So are you the one who called me last night?

Me: Yes, I am.

Khumo: Why does your voice keep on changing? Your voice was different last night.

Me: I drink something that makes my voice change.

Khumo: When?

Me: Whenever I want to change my voice.

Khumo: You are definitely not Dean's brother. You are obviously a different race so why did you lie to me?

Me: Well

it was a test.

Khumo: Test?

...

I told her about the test I put her through last night.

...

Khumo: Aiden?? Did he really tell you what to say?

Me: Yes.

Khumo: So does it mean that you know nothing about me?

Me: Well, yes. I only know that you are Khumo Jones and that you were adopted by The Jones when you were 8 years old. That's all Aiden told

me. Oh, he also told me that he loves you a lot and that I should protect you.

Khumo: But you abducted me.

Me: I had to. I didn't want anyone to suspect you. Didn't you also act along with me?

Khumo: Who are you Tony? You can see through me and that's really weird.

Me: (Smiles) Guess who I am.

Khumo: You are exactly like Aiden. So annoying.

Me: (Smiles) I know. Now tell me, why do you love Aiden? He's old.

Khumo: He's just 10 years older than me. It's not that bad. I didn't choose to love him, my stupid heart did.

Me: Mhmm, I see. You are right. 10 years is not that bad. Age is just a number.

Khumo: Please stop running away from my question. Who are you? You are obviously not Dean Jones' brother.

Me: And who are you??

Khumo: Seriously?? Do you want to play this game??

Me: We are both hiding our real identities so why should I be the only one to tell you everything?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Do you get it? I have already figured out who you are so you must also figure out who I am.

Khumo: Did you really figure out who I am?

Me: Yes, I did. I figured it out the moment I saw you. I definitely know your real identity and I can't be wrong.

Khumo: Really? But how?

Me: Only you, can live with The Jones after everything they did to your family. You are the bravest person I know.

Khumo: Mr T, you said that you only know that I'm Khumo Jones so why does it sound like you know everything about me and my past?

Me: I...

...

She quickly grabbed my gun and shot at the fool that was eavesdropping. She killed him right there. My heart broke when I saw how brutal she is now. I have not seen her for so many years. She used to be so innocent and bubbly. Now she's very cold and she kills without any hesitation. I never wanted this for her. It's really my fault. I shouldn't have said the things I said to her when...

...

Khumo: Do you know that you have a traitor working for you??

Me: Traitor??

Khumo: Actually you had a traitor working for you. I just killed him for you.

Me: I knew about him.

Khumo: So why did you keep him?

Me: For fun. It's exciting.

Khumo: Stop playing with your life. I would kill anybody for you but you still should be careful.

Me: Why would you kill for me when you just met me?

Khumo: I... I don't know. Why did I say that? You didn't use witchcraft on me, right?

Me: (Smiles) Not at all. Well, let me continue what you started. Live a good life from now on and don't get your hands stained with blood.

Khumo: My hands are already stained with blood. I started getting rid of people from the age of 8. I was young by then and I wasn't strong physically so I had to use my brain to get everything done.

Me: I am really sorry. You shouldn't have gone through that.

Khumo: Why are you sorry? The Jones are to blame.

Me: I know but I want to continue what you started. Live a normal life and be happy. I will take care of the rest.

...

She had teary eyes.

...

Khumo: Your face is not his and your voice is not his so why do you keep on behaving like him? Why do you want to do things for me like you are my daddy??

Me: I want to do everything for you because you are still My Little Diamond.

Khumo: Wh... What did you say?

...

I completely broke down. I knelt down before her and allowed tears to stream down my face. I was a mess. I broke down... completely!!!!

...

Khumo: (Cries) What did you call me?? Who are you??

Me: Camilla Modise, My Little Diamond. Daddy is back. 78780!!!!

Khumo: Daddy???????????????? My Daddy????

## Chapter 28

[Khumo]

What... how?? What is this man saying?? How is he my daddy?? He doesn't look like my daddy at all and he doesn't sound like him. But... but... he just used the code 78780 and it means "I am sorry". Who else would know my family members' codes if not a family member?? I'm so confused.

...

Me: Sir, why are you doing this to me? Who are you and why did you call me like my daddy??

Mr T: It's me. I'm really your daddy.

Me: But you don't look like my daddy and sound like him.

Mr T: I have already told you that I always drink something that changes my voice whenever I want to change my voice.

Me: And the face?

Mr T: 593744. Do you still remember that code?? It's about the fake faces. You obviously have a fake face right now. I also have a fake face. My enemies believe that I'm dead so of course I had to use a fake face just like you.

...

I can't be weak right now, can I?? I can't just believe everything he says. I need him to show me proof. What if this man is just an imposter??

...

Me: I don't believe you at all.

Mr T: And it's understandable. I will prove everything to you.

...

Aiden walked in.

...

Aiden: Are you really her father? Aren't you Dean's brother??

...

Mr T got up and wiped away his tears.

...

Mr T: Aiden, did you hear everything?

Aiden: Yes, I did. Who are you?? I was told that you are Dean Jones' brother so how are you Khumo's father??

Mr T: We lied to you.

Aiden: Why?? Could it be that none of you trust me??

Mr T: No, it's nothing like that. We...

Aiden: Does my own father know who you are?

Mr T: Yes.

Aiden: Your real identity????

Mr T: Yes.

Aiden: And what about Mr Martin?

Mr T: He knows everything.

Aiden: What about Njabulo??

Mr T: He knows everything. He was the one who saved my life and involved my brother.

Aiden: Is he really your son in-law?

...

Mr T nodded.

...

Me: Does that mean that my sister is alive??

Mr T: Yes, she is. Actually everyone survived.

...

I was losing my mind. I went through so much heartbreak all my life and all I wanted was to avenge my family members' deaths but now all my

family members are alive. Why did they not find me? Is Hector Modise not a nerd?? Why did they not find me at all??

...

Me: You are all cruel. You and your family members have been really cruel to me. Stay away from me.

Mr T: My Little Diamond, I am so...

Me: (Shouts) DON'T CALL ME THAT!!!! YOU ALL HAVE BEEN HORRIBLE TO ME. YOU DID NOT FIND ME AT ALL BECAUSE YOU DIDN'T TRY TO FIND ME.

Mr T: No. We really tried to find you and we never stopped looking for you. I am so so sorry.

Aiden: (Shouts) MR T, DID YOU NOT TRUST ME TO FIND YOUR DAUGHTER?? I HAVE BEEN AROUND HER FOR 14 YEARS AND YOU, KHUMO OR WHOEVER YOUR NAME IS, COULD YOU NOT TELL ME ANYTHING AT ALL?? AM I THAT UNTRUSTWORTHY???? IT'S FINE, I WILL LEAVE ALL OF YOU. I DON'T WANT ANYTHING TO DO WITH THE MODISES AND THE SMITHS!!!!

Me: Aiden, you...

...

He walked away.

...

I looked at Mr T. Tears were streaming down my face. I spoke very calmly but with a broken heart.

...

Me: I also don't want anything to do with The Modises and The Smiths.

Mr T: My baby, that would break us. We can't live without you.

Me: You have been living without me, haven't you?

Mr T: But we never stopped looking for you and thinking of you.

Me: Hector Modise, my point is, you did not find me at all. What happened today was just a coincidence. You were not there for Camilla Modise, you were there for Oliver and Daniel and met Khumo Jones. I want you to stay away from me.

Mr T: Did you just call me by my name?? My dear, please give me a chance to explain everything to you.

Me: Leave me alone. If you come near me again, I will kill myself.

...

I left.

...

[Few Minutes Later]

[Martin]

I arrived at a place where my brother texted me to come and I was shocked to see how he was looking.

...

Me: You are a mess. What's going on?

Mr T: Did you take care of Daniel and Oliver?

Me: Yes. I told Njabulo to take care of everything.

Mr T: Is Njabulo here?

Me: Yes. Why?

Mr T: Did he know??

Me: Know what? What's going on?

Mr T: Camilla is alive and she was just here.

Me: Are you serious?

Mr T: Yes, I am. She goes by the name Khumo Jones.

Me: Khumo Jones? I don't follow.

Mr T: She was adopted by Dean and Sarah Jones.

Me: WHAT????? HOW COULD THEY DO THAT AFTER EVERYTHING???? DO THEY...

Mr T: Camilla is the one who allowed herself to be adopted by The Jones.

Me: Wow. Keep your friends close and your enemies closer.

Mr T: Exactly. Aiden loves Khumo and we have heard both Aiden and Thato talking about Khumo. So I am guessing that Thato's friend is my daughter; the same daughter we have been looking for.

...

I froze. I felt so bad and I felt like I failed my brother. None of this would have happened if I had told Thato everything years ago when she wanted to help me. I had told her that she won't be able to find someone

I can't find and that she should stay away from the matter. It turns out that Camilla was close all these years and I couldn't tell. Thato was always around Camilla and I couldn't tell. Martin, what have you done??

...

Mr T: Have you ever met her?

Me: I only met her yesterday outside my yard. Thato came out of the yard and introduced me to Khu... Camilla. I'm really sorry; I couldn't recognize her at all. I'm a bad brother to you. I am really sorry.

Mr T: You are not a bad brother. Her disguise is strong. It's even better than mine. She did a better job than me despite learning from me. I also couldn't recognize her by how she looks. I only recognized her by her presence. I could feel that she is my baby girl.

Me: But why couldn't I feel what you felt? I am really bad.

Mr T: You are not bad. I think that I was able to feel her because I am her daddy. She's My Little Diamond. Please don't blame yourself. I think that her mom and siblings also would not be able to recognize her. It's okay.

Me: Fine. I hear you but I should have told Thato everything years ago when she wanted to help me look for Camilla. I should've...

Mr T: Blaming ourselves would not solve anything. The good thing is that my daughter is alive and we know her whereabouts. She's angry at everyone right now so we should give her some space to process everything.

Me: (Sighs) Does she know everything?

...

He shook his head.

...

Me: Why not?

Mr T: She has been through a lot. She doesn't have to know what her family members went through.

Me: But what if telling her would make her less angry?

Mr T: No, Martin. She should never know everything. We can tell her how we survived but we don't have to tell her all about the things we went through. I want her to be happy. She has been through a lot.

Me: Fine. I get you.



Mr T: I am not feeling well. I am going to my house.

Me: Leave everything to me. I will find a way to explain everything to Camilla. Everyone knows that you have never stopped looking for her. Everyone knows that your wife is...

Mr T: Stop. Camilla must never know that her mom is... I am leaving. Please find a way to explain things to her and make her feel better.

Me: I got you.

...

He left.

## Chapter 29

[Khumo]

I really feel like I'm losing it. I am so confused. I don't know what is what and I don't know what's really happening. I am so lost. Everything feels surreal.

...

My "mom" could not stop calling me so I had to take the call.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Sarah Jones???? What do you want?

Sarah: Sarah Jones???? My baby???? Are you okay? I saw the video you sent.

Me: Stay away from me. Everybody must stay away from me or else I will explode and hurt people.

Sarah: My baby, wha...

...

I hung up on her and switched off my phone.

...

The truth is I can't think straight when I'm distracted. I am not perfect so I also have a weakness that could get me killed or get others killed. Well, I don't care what happens to me at this point; everyone failed me. I had to grow up fast. I was already a grown up at the age of 8 and that's very wrong. They must all stay away from me. I don't want them at all.

...

[Mrs Jones]

What is happening?? Why did Oliver and Daniel do that to my daughter?? I'm so mad at them. I had to rush home but Khumo is nowhere to be found. Daniel and Oliver are also nowhere to be found and I saw blood in the house and outside. What could be going on? There's also something wrong with the footage. I mean, Khumo sent me a video where Oliver was hurt by Daniel, but Daniel sent me a different video where Khumo is the one hurting Oliver. Could it be that Daniel hurt Khumo after he mistakenly hit Oliver? Is that the reason why Khumo is mad at me and called me Sarah Jones?? She has never called me by my name so I think that she's also mad at me.

...

May walked in.

...

May: Mom, what happened here? Blood outside?? And blood inside??

Me: I...

May: Could it be Khumo's blood?? (Smiles) Is she finally dead??

...

I slapped her and she shocked me when she slapped me back.

...

Me: Did you just slap your own mother??

May: (Yells) WHY NOT?? YOU SLAPPED ME FIRST.

Me: May Jones, did you just slap your own mother??

May: YES, I DID. YOU LOVE KHUMO MORE THAN YOUR OWN CHILDREN. YOU ARE ALWAYS SIDING WITH HER. I HATE YOU SO MUCH. HOW CAN YOU SLAP ME JUST LIKE THAT?? YOU ARE A FOOL AND I AM WARNING YOU. DON'T REPEAT IT AGAIN. YOUR FOOLISH HUSBAND IS NOT AROUND TO HELP YOU!!

...

I got mad at her and said things I probably shouldn't have said.

...

Me: I wish Maya was alive and not you. You are a horrible daughter who doesn't know how to love others. I wish that someone can teach you a lesson out there for me. I wish you were never born, you demon.

...

She pushed me and walked to her bedroom. Her boyfriend walked in and attempted to follow her but I stopped him.

...

Me: Liam, where do you think you are going?

Liam: (Chuckles) Oh, Mrs Jones. I didn't see you. I am sorry.

Me: You passed me. How can you say that you didn't see me?

Liam: Well, I apologize. My mind is somewhere else.

...

He walked away.

...

Is this the kind of boyfriend May wants? He's so arrogant and he pretended to be a nice person when he met us for the first time last night at the hospital.

T.N\*\* Aiden's mother, who was always referred to as "Teacher aka Kate" will now be referred to as "Kate Smith". \*\*

.

.

[Kate Smith]

I was alone at home, watching TV when I saw some girl walking in. She looked like a mess. She was in tears.

...

But... who is she and how did she let herself into my house?? Should I be worried?? But I really feel bad for her.

...

I got up and looked at her.

...

Me: Uh... who are you??

Her: They really failed me. I can only trust you.

Me: Huh?? Who...

...

She came closer to me and hugged me.

...

Me: Ca... Camilla????

Her: You see?? You were also able to recognize me. They failed me.

Me: Camilla, what happened... hold on...

...

I broke off the hug and looked at her face.

...

Me: You... your face?? You look like a... a girl I used to teach in Primary School. Yes, you look like Khumo Jones. Who... what's going on? You smell like Camilla and I can tell that you are Camilla by just touching you but your face... what on earth is going on here?? Am I hallucinating??

Her: They are alive. I suffered for them but they have been alive. It's been 14 years now. Why didn't they ever find me?? They all survived.

...

I wish I knew what she was talking about. I am really lost. I decided to just let her vent and cry. I comforted her even though I was lost.

...

[May]

I can't believe that Sarah slapped me for Khumo again... actually it's no longer surprising. I hate Khumo so much and I will make sure to get rid of her for good. I will make sure that I hurt Sarah and Dean Jones so much. They replaced me with Khumo and I will never forget it.

...

Liam walked in and hugged me.

...

Me: Babe, why is my mother like that?

Liam: I told you that she's a snake, did I not??

Me: And I didn't believe you until she chased me out of the hospital last night.

Liam: Now you should only listen to me. I will never do anything to hurt you.

Me: Well, I still don't know why you were looking at Khumo last night. What's so special about her??

Liam: Why are you worried?? I was just looking at the girl you told me about when we were in Canada. I don't like her. She's not even beautiful.

...

I broke off the hug and looked at him.

...

Me: (Smiles) Right? She's not beautiful at all so I don't know why so many people love her.

Liam: (Smiles) You have nothing to worry about. I am all yours.

Me: (Smiles) I love you so much, baby.

Liam: I love you too. (Smiles) You make me really happy.

...

We shared a very passionate kiss. I really love Liam a lot and I would do absolutely anything for him. I would kill for him.

## Chapter 30

[Aiden]

I arrived at home (not my house) and found Khumo with my mom.

...

Me: Uhh, what's going on here??

Kate: Son, this is the girl I... she's... she's...

Me: Confusing, right?? She trusts nobody so I don't blame you for not knowing how to say it.

Kate: Do you know her??

Me: Yes, I do. She's Khumo. I told you about her.

Kate: Oh???? Khumo, your girlfriend??

Me: I... uhh... I don't like her anymore. She doesn't trust me at all and she used me for all these years.

Kate: What?? Used you?? How??

...

Khumo got up and wiped off her tears.

...

Khumo: Do you really want to tell your mom about how I used you??  
Shouldn't you also tell her about everything?? Double standards, huh??

...

I kept quiet because I already knew where this was going.

...

Khumo: Aiden????

Me: I... I don't want to talk to you or see you ever again.

Khumo: Fine. I will go away from you forever.

Kate: Okay, the two of you need to calm down. What's really going on here??

Khumo: Teacher, it's really me.

Kate: Huh?? Camilla??

Khumo: Yes. I am Camilla.

Me: Hold on, mom. Do you also know Camilla??

Kate: Yes, I do. I used to teach her and she...

Me: Couldn't you tell me??

Kate: What do you mean?? I used to talk about her all the time. I still talk about her. She's also the girl I told you to marry.

Me: Khumo, do you see what you have done?? It's because of you that your dad and uncle suffered. You were also with my mom for all these years and you... you... oh, my goodness.

...

I walked to my bedroom. I was really fuming. Does this girl even know what Mr T went through?? Does she know what her entire family went through?? Does she even know that her mom is...

...

[Kate Smith]

I wonder what happened between Aiden and Khu... Camilla. I am really lost but I could tell that they love one another a lot.

...

Kate: Camilla, how are you Khumo??

Khumo: It's a very long story.

Kate: I have all the time. You know that I always have time for you.

Khumo: (Smiles) And I appreciate that.

Me: Come. Sit down and tell me everything.

Khumo: Okay.

...

She sat down and began telling me what she did once she ran away from me the time we got out of the cave together.

...

I was so shocked and hurt. I can't believe that she wore a fake face and lived with her family's enemies.

...

Me: I am so so sorry for what you went through. You... why couldn't you just live with me and my family? You and I had agreed that you would live with me and my family. Why did you run away from me??

Khumo: Didn't we already talk about this?? I told you why I ran away from you. I told you as Camilla.

Me: But you could've concealed your identity living with The Smiths the same way you concealed it when living with The Jones.

Khumo: I didn't want to make any mistakes but now I regret not living with you. Your family could have protected me.

Me: (Cries) I feel so bad.

Khumo: And I'm leaving.

Me: Please don't leave. Work things out with Aiden. I promise you that he's not a bad person.

Khumo: I know that he's not a bad person. I want to give him his own space. He feels used. I really didn't mean to make him feel like he was used. My feelings for him are real.

...

I wiped away my tears and looked at her.

...

Me: Do you really love him??

Khumo: A lot. I know that he's old but it's not like he looks old. He is...

Me: (Giggles) I understand. My husband is also older than me. It's normal. Love does not choose.

Khumo: (Smiles) I kept the truth from him because I realized that he's too caring and loyal. He has been following me around since I was 8

years old. He did so many things for me. I tried my best to push him away but he never left me. I understand why he's angry right now. He feels like nobody trusts him. I love Aiden a lot, Mrs Smith. I really do and I would take a bullet for him.

Me: Uhhh

what really happened??

Khumo: I... I don't want to talk about it. I hope that you understand.

Me: Okay. No problem. So why were you crying today??

Khumo: I... well, ...

Me: You don't have to tell me if you are not ready.

Khumo: They are alive.

Me: Who are they? Who are you talking about?

Khumo: My daddy and everyone else.

Me: Huhhhh???? But how?? They... they got shot right in front of you and me.

Khumo: I also don't understand anything. Do you remember the girl that looked like me??

Me: The one that died with your family members??

Khumo: Yes, that one.

Me: Yes, I remember her.

Khumo: She was actually Maya Jones. She replaced me so I was told that everyone survived. I think... Maya must also have survived.

Me: Oh, my goodness. I am so shocked.

Khumo: Too much to process, right?? I feel like I am going crazy. I am so lost.

Me: How do you know that everyone survived??

Khumo: My daddy said it.

Me: Uhh, did you meet him??

Khumo: Yes.

Me: Your real father??

Khumo: Yes.

Me: Biological??

Khumo: Uhh, yes.

...

I got up and paced up and down.



...

This is a dream, right? It can't be true. She... she really went through a lot and...

...

Khumo suddenly screamed. She held her head and screamed so much. Her nose started bleeding. She fell unconscious after screaming and holding her head.

...

Aiden came running.

...

Aiden: Let's take her to the hospital.

Me: How are you here so soon?? Have you been eavesdropping??

Aiden: Does that matter??

Me: I... uhh... what could be wrong with her??

Aiden: She goes through the same thing now and then. The doctor said that it has something to do with her mental health. She goes through a mental breakdown now and then and if she doesn't get better anytime soon she might go crazy.

Me: Oh, my goodness. I... let's go.

Aiden: Did she really go through a lot?? Did her family members really get killed in front of you and Khumo??

...

I nodded.

...

Aiden: So... They were saved by Njabulo if I'm not mistaken. Wow, Njabulo is heavenly sent.

...

He said that carrying Khumo to the car.

...

Me: Huh?? Who is that??

Aiden: Without Njabulo, they could have died.

Me: Aiden, what are you talking about?

Aiden: Are you getting in the car??

Me: Yes, yes. I am.

...

I got in the car. Aiden drove off.

...

Me: What's really going??

Aiden: Mom, I really don't know everything but now everything makes sense. Khumo must not go crazy like her mom.

Me: WHAT???? CRAZY AS IN LIKE CRAZY????

Aiden: Yes. Her mom is mentally unstable. She sometimes gets better but sometimes gets worse. I think she is the way she is because Khumo could not be found.

Me: I can only imagine. I feel so bad.

Aiden: I really want Khumo to feel better. She must not be admitted to a mental asylum like her mom.

Me: WHAT???? IS HER MOM EVEN AT A MENTAL ASYLUM????

## Chapter 31

[Two Days Later]

[Khumo]

I know that what happened to me was beyond my control. I had a mental breakdown as always but I still fought. I don't care what Hector Modise or whatever his name is says. I will be the one to teach The Jones a lesson. The Jones must pay for my horrible childhood and for turning me into a cold blooded murderer.

...

I was in my ward when Kelsy's husband walked in.

...

Him: Hey, are you okay?

Me: I... (Cries) Brother, why did you abandon me? I missed you so much.

...

I know that it's weird but I really get along with Kelsy's husband. He has always been there for me and he protects me like crazy. Kelsy's husband treats me the same way Aiden treated me from the age of 8 but

I know that Kelsy's husband does not want me romantically; he's legit like a brother to me. He's a brother I never had.

...

Him: (Smiles) I missed you too. I didn't abandon you.

Me: But you haven't been calling me or taking my calls.

Him: I lost my phone, dear. I'm so sorry but I'm going to get a new one soon.

...

He came closer to me, hugged me and looked at me.

...

Me: What is it?

Him: When did you become such a crybaby?

Me: Do you really want to tease me right now?

Him: (Laughs) I'm sorry.

...

He wiped away my tears and hugged me again.

...

Him: I'm really sorry.

Me: Why are you sorry?

Him: I left you alone that's why Oliver and Daniel tried to harm you.

...

I broke off the hug and looked at him.

...

Me: How do you know?

Him: Mrs Jones called a family meeting and showed all of us the video you sent to her. She didn't want to involve her children's partners but she had to because of me.

Me: What do you mean?

Him: She knows that you and I are close. Everyone knows that you and I are close so I was asked to look for you.

Me: So how did you find me, Brother?

Him: Through Aiden.

Me: Aiden?

Him: Yes, Aiden Smith.

...

Brother does not know that Aiden Smith is the same person Kelsy wants so bad. It's not my place to tell him about Kelsy and Aiden so I will just have to keep quiet like I always do.

...

Aiden walked in. He happily greeted Kelsy's husband and sat down.

...

Me: What's going on?

...

Aiden looked at Kelsy's husband and nodded. Kelsy's husband immediately left.

...

Me: What was that about?

Aiden: Huh?

Me: Aiden, what are you planning? If you hurt him I will...

Aiden: You will...?

Me: Aiden, I... what's going on between you and Kelsy's husband?

Aiden: That fool is...

Me: Don't call him a fool. That's my brother.

Aiden: (Smiles) Okay. Sorry.

Me: Aiden, you are acting weird. Didn't you tell me that you don't want anything to do with me? Why are you here?

Aiden: I came to see my wife. Are you not happy to see me?

Me: Don't call me your wife. You are acting weird.

Aiden: I'm just happy. Njabulo and his wife had a serious argument and they might separate. Njabulo's wife is actually your sister. Mr T is Njabulo's father-in-law.

Me: Hold on. Are you actually happy that Njabulo and his wife might separate?

Aiden: No. I'm happy because of something else.

Me: Why are you even talking to me right now? You are not making any sense.

Aiden: I am happy to be around you.

Me: Do you want to go on a killing spree with me?

Aiden: Anything for you.

Me: Are you no longer mad at me?

Aiden: Well, I'm not. Yes, we need to work on a lot of things together but I'm okay now that my mom told me everything about you.

Me: Oh, I see.

Aiden: I am really sorry for everything you went through. You didn't deserve to go through the things you went through.

Me: It's already done.

Aiden: The time I took my mom's car outside The Modises Mansion, I... I was actually not thinking straight. I should've known that something was wrong. I mean, I knew that The Jones were visiting The Modises but I didn't know that they were actually holding them hostage. I really thought that it was a friendly visit because if I remember well, Hector Modise and Dean Jones were friends.

Me: I also used to think that they were friends. Well, it was an act. Dean Jones never wanted to befriend Hector Modise for the right reasons.

Aiden: I am sorry. I really didn't know that Dean was acting. I took my mom's car away on that night because I knew that The Jones were planning to hijack a car that looked exactly like my mom's car. I took my mom's car away and kept it safe because I wanted to protect her and her car. I really didn't know that she was actually inside The Modises Mansion. I thought that she only parked her car outside the yard and attended the party that was taking place across The Modises Mansion.

Me: Yeah, that street was busy on that night.

Aiden: But still, I should've known and helped.

Me: Aiden, it's really okay. I don't blame you for just saving your mom's car that night. You were young and also mischievous so there was no way anybody could have known what The Jones were planning.

Aiden: Yes but I still feel bad.

Me: What could you have done to help?

Aiden: Call backup and go in to save everyone.

Me: Your backup would have arrived late. You were definitely going to end up dying inside. Yes, I couldn't save everyone on that night because I was so young and couldn't do anything but at least I was able to save myself and also save your mom.

...

He kept quiet and held my hand.

...

Me: Aiden, I know that you are a good person and I am grateful that you are in my life so please don't overthink. Everything is in the past. What happened to me and my family members can never be undone.

Aiden: I know, baby. I'm sorry. You deserve to be happy and I promise to never leave you.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

He kissed my forehead and smiled.

...

Aiden: Were you serious about going on a killing spree?

Me: No. I was just testing you because you were acting weird.

Aiden: I actually have good news for you.

Me: What is it?

Aiden: They are finally free.

Me: Who are you talking about?

Aiden: Njabulo's entire family members.

Me: (Smiles) Really? Including Aunt Letty?

Aiden: (Smiles) Yes.

Me: That's really amazing. I'm really happy. That's the best news ever.

Aiden: I know. Their situation really troubled you but at least now you have so many people to help you.

Me: I'm truly happy. So were you serious when you said that Njabulo and his wife might separate?

Aiden: Yes. Do you remember when Njabulo said that his wife knew about him trying to find out if you are Camilla?

Me: Yes. His wife even allowed him to kiss me and be in a relationship with me just to try to find Camilla.

Aiden: Njabulo lied. His wife knew nothing. Everything became clear when Mr T told everyone that you are alive. Njabulo did not warn me so I spoke about what he had told us and things immediately went south. Your sister is mad at Njabulo for dating you and for not telling anyone about you from the beginning.

Me: I feel bad. I know that Njabulo is a good person. He was trying to find me without raising anyone's hopes.

Aiden: I don't like Njabulo but I also think that he kept everything to himself because he wanted to be sure first.

Me: So are things that bad?

Aiden: Yes, very bad.

Me: Is everyone mad at Njabulo?

Aiden: No. Others were mad for probably a day. They are now fine.

Your sister is the only one who is still mad.

Me: I guess I will have to go meet everyone soon. I will kill her if she dares to dump Njabulo.

Aiden: (Laughs) I trust you.

Me: (Smiles) You are a fool.

Aiden: Oh, my goodness. I can't get over how beautiful you are. Please smile more from now on. Your smile is breathtaking.

Me: Stop it.

Aiden: (Smiles) I can't. I'm really in love with you. Khumo, you drive me crazy.

Me: (Smiles) Stop it. I hate this feeling.

Aiden: Khumo Jones, Camilla Modise, would you please make me the happiest man on earth and be my wife? Please marry me.

Me: You... are...

...

He knelt down on one knee and took out a ring box from his pocket. He proposed again. He really proposed. Is he... is he mad? He skipped the girlfriend phase. How can I be his wife without ever being his girlfriend? And... woah, I... this is too much

## Chapter 32

[Khumo]

I looked at Aiden and already knew what I wanted to say.

...

Me: Well, I appreciate your kindness but I don't want to lie to you. I'm not yet ready for marriage. I care a lot about you and I don't want to hurt you. Let me first be a better person for myself and for you. I have been

through a lot and I believe that I still have not yet healed. I'm very broken, Aiden so I don't want to drag you down with me. You deserve to be happy and I don't think that I'd be a good wife with everything that is still going on. Please allow me to heal first so that I can love you the right way and give you all the happiness you deserve.

Aiden: Okay. I understand but you still need to wear my ring even though we won't get married anytime soon.

Me: (Smiles) Okay. I don't have a problem with that but before marrying you, I would love to be your girlfriend first.

Aiden: (Laughs) We skipped that stage, didn't we?

Me: Exactly.

...

We both laughed. He put a ring on my finger and got up.

...

Aiden: I will do the right thing. I promise.

Me: What do you mean?

Aiden: (Smiles) Don't worry. I got you.

Me: Are you talking about the girlfriend stage?

Aiden: Yes, I will do the right thing. I will ask you to be my girlfriend the right way.

Me: (Smiles) I will wait.

Aiden: So, what's next?

Me: What are you talking about?

Aiden: The Jones.

Me: What should be next?

Aiden: It's really up to you. I will support you no matter what.

Me: I will answer you later.

Aiden: Why?

...

Aiden, my plan has to change and it's all because of you and the fact that my family members survived. I need to change so many things because the truth is I was willing to...

...

Aiden: What's going on? Are you hiding something from me?

Me: You will just get mad at me and leave.



Aiden: I won't. I promise.

Me: I will tell you later.

Aiden: You are now scaring me.

Me: (Nervous Chuckle) Don't worry.

...

He got a phone call and went outside.

...

[Later That Day]

I arrived at home with Kelsy's husband. My "mom" was so happy to see me. She couldn't stop thanking Kelsy's husband. Well, I agreed to come back because of what I was told at the hospital. Trust me when I say that The Jones are going down. What Aiden and Kelsy's husband told me at the hospital left me shocked and feeling good.

...

Sarah: Baby, Oliver and Daniel ran away after what they did to you.

...

Ran away? She is delusional if that's what she believes. Oliver, Daniel and Johnny are being tortured somewhere. Daniel did not die when he was shot by Mr T but I would have preferred to die if I was him. What he is going through right now is the worst. Well, Aiden showed me a video of what those three are going through.

...

Me: Mom, I don't want to talk about what happened. I...

May: I am sure that you got what you deserved. You must have seduced them. You are a wh\*\*\*. I wish they would have raped you and...

Sarah: MAY???? WHAT IS WRONG WITH YOU???????

May: What? She killed Maya. She's living Maya's life and...

...

I just walked away. May attempted to follow me but Kelsy's husband stopped her.

...

Seriously, what is wrong with May? How can somebody hate me so much? I never provoked her first so why is she always so mean to me? I was fuming.

...

I got a call from Thato.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hi.

Thato: I'm really sorry.

Me: For what?

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Thato: For everything you went through. You deserve all the happiness in the world. I'm truly sorry.

Me: Did you know them from years ago?

Thato: Who are you talking about?

Me: My family members.

Thato: Do you want the truth?

Me: Yes, I do.

Thato: So why don't you just meet up with them? They all want to see you so bad.

Me: I'm not ready. I'm very mad at them.

Thato: I understand. Well, I promise to tell you what I know but not over the phone.

Me: Why not over the phone?

Thato: I want to see you when I tell you what I know about your family.

Me: Fine.

Thato: I'll come to your home if you don't meet up with me.

Me: (Giggles) Fine. We will meet up.

Thato: Good.

Me: Thato, Johnny was the one who buried you alive, right?

Thato: Yes. Why?

Me: Does that mean that Johnny's wife is your mom?

Thato: Yes.

Me: Do you want me to teach her a lesson? I'm in a mood to hurt someone. May just said terrible words to me.

Thato: (Giggles) Call me over. I also want to teach that woman a lesson.

Me: I will send you an address. Meet me there. Johnny's entire family members are here with us. They will go to their house soon so we'll abduct your mom by then.

Thato: (Laughs) Wow, that sounds like a perfect thing to do. I'm in.

Me: Are you sure? She's still your mom.

Thato: I am sure. I hate her.

Me: Don't regret later.

Thato: Okay.

Me: Bye. I need to plan ahead.

Thato: Okay. No problem.

...

I hung up and went out to plan everything. Thato's mom is evil so I will teach her a lesson. I won't kill her but I will definitely hurt her.

...

I was now on my way back home when I got a call from Aiden.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, Aiden.

Aiden: I'm not okay.

Me: Uhh... why?

Aiden: You still didn't tell me what you said you'd tell me later.

Me: Aiden, not now. I don't want to miss this chance.

Aiden: Chance? What chance?

Me: I'm going to teach Thato's mom a lesson.

Aiden: Are you serious?

Me: Yes.

Aiden: Why didn't you involve me?

Me: It's not a killing spree. I just want to hurt her. I won't kill her at all.

Aiden: I still want to help.

Me: Fine. I'll send you all the details.

Aiden: No problem. But... I need you to tell me what you said you'd tell me later.

Me: The truth is...

Aiden: What is it?

Me: The main reason I pushed everyone away from the beginning was because I wanted to die with The Jones. My plan...

Aiden: WHAT DID YOU SAY???? ARE YOU THAT SELFISH????

Me: Aiden, listen to me. My plan has to change now becau...

...

He hung up on me.

...

Couldn't he just listen to everything? Yes, I wanted to die with The Jones. I was going to brutally kill them all and go through a peaceful death alone. Yes, I didn't want to live until I started having feelings for Aiden. Now my family members are alive so why would I want to die? But this is not even about my family members, it's about Aiden; he's the one who changed my plan. I love him so much and I don't want to leave him alone so I have to stay alive. I wanted to say all these things to Aiden but he's hotheaded and did not want to give me a chance to explain.

## Chapter 33

[Mr Jones]

I woke up and realized that I was lying in the hospital bed. I panicked for a moment and suddenly remembered everything that landed me in the hospital. I called my favorite daughter right away.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Khumo: Uhh... hello? Why do you have my dad's phone?

Me: Dear, it's me.

Khumo: Dad, is that really you? Are you not hospitalized? Are you okay? What's going...

Me: (Giggles) Enough.

Khumo: Sorry. But are you really okay?

Me: Yes, I'm doing okay. I just woke up and had to call you right away.

Khumo: Did you call me before everyone else?

Me: Yes, I had to check if you are okay.

Khumo: I'm okay but...

...

She stopped talking.

...

Me: What's going on? Is everything okay?

Khumo: (Giggles) Yes.

Me: Are you being honest?

Khumo: Yes, I am.

Me: Why do I feel like you are hiding something from me?

Khumo: I'm not. I was just distracted. I'm sorry.

Me: Okay. I'm coming home right away.

Khumo: Right now?

Me: Yes, right now.

Khumo: Dad, are you telling me that you are about to discharge yourself?

Me: Yes. I need to be home with my family.

Khumo: Who shot you?

...

Okay, she asked me what I wanted her not to ask.

...

Khumo: Dad?

Me: Uh... I don't know.

Khumo: Is everything okay?

Me: What do you mean?

Khumo: Why would someone just shoot you? What's going on?

Me: My dear, please trust me. I was at the wrong place. The bullet was not meant for me. I was just passing by.

Khumo: Oh, I see.

Me: What did the others tell you?

Khumo: Nothing. They always avoid telling me.

Me: It's because you have nothing to worry about. Everything is okay.

Khumo: Okay, dad.

Me: Bye. See you soon.

Khumo: Huh?? See me soon??

Me: Yes, I'm coming home and I'm dying to see you.

Khumo: Uhh, dad... I... you see...

Me: What? Do you have plans? It's already late.

Khumo: Yes, I have plans.

Me: Can't you cancel them?

Khumo: No, dad. I can't.

Me: For me?

Khumo: But dad, I...

Me: Are you seeing someone?

Khumo: (Giggles) No, I'm not. Fine. I'll stay home.

Me: Yes, don't go anywhere.

Khumo: Okay. Bye.

Me: Bye, my baby.

...

I hung up and got ready to leave.

...

I truly believe that the person who shot me is my biggest enemy. That person came straight for me. Why? Why was I his target? What if he's coming for my entire family members? Khumo is Camilla Modise of my family and she should be treated like an egg. No harm should come to her. I will make sure that she doesn't go anywhere without bodyguards. But how will I explain why she must go everywhere with bodyguards? Oh, Khumo just called me and cancelled our plan. I'm disappointed but I understand why she has to be home. She also instructed me to tell my dad that Mr Jones is awake and fine.

...

I went straight to my dad's study and found my dad with Mr T... I... I mean, Mr Hector. Well, Mr T... No, Uncle Hector... Uhm... Everything is still very much confusing so I'll just stick to Mr T.

...

Me: (Smiles) Good evening, Mr T. How are you?

Mr T: (Smiles) I'm good, dear. How are you?

Me: You really look like Khumo now that you have removed the fake face.

Martin: How are you able to tell that he looks like Khumo? Have you seen Khumo's real face?

Me: No but Mr T's smile looks exactly like Khumo's smile. Khumo may have a fake face on but her smile is real. She hardly smiles but she smiles a lot recently. She has a beautiful smile just like Mr T...

Martin: Heyyy?? What about me? Is my smile not beautiful?

Me: (Laughs) This is not about you. Stop being jealous, dad.

Mr T: (Giggles) Your daughter is absolutely lively. She's always happy.

Me: (Smiles) Mr T, should I tell you something?

...

He smiled and nodded.

...

Me: I'm always happy because I have your daughter in my life. She has always been there for me and fought with others for me whether it was behind my back or right before me. I used to struggle to sleep when I was young because whenever I closed my eyes, I recalled how I was buried alive so my dad used to read bedtime stories for me so that I can sleep peacefully but when I met Khumo and saw how strong and cold she was, I knew that I wanted her to be my friend. I have learned a lot from her. You have an amazing daughter, you should be proud.

Mr T: (Smiles) Thank you. I really appreciate your kind words but I just wish that she was not cold from such a young age. It's my fault because I had told her to avenge her family's death when she was hiding in the secret room. I asked Aiden everything about my daughter and he told me things that left me bothered.

Me: I hear what you are saying but everything will be fine. What is done is done. Khumo will even forgive all of you. Don't worry too much.

Mr T: Thank you, dear.

Me: I also have an idea.

Mr T: What is it?

Me: Everyone does not want to tell Khumo that Aunt Freya is hospitalized. Is it not wrong?

Martin: My baby, how is it wrong? Khumo has been through a lot. She won't be able to take the news of her mom being mentally challenged.

Me: But dad, I'm the one who is always around Khumo and I really know her and how strong she is. I believe that she is the only one who can get her mom healed before it's too late.

...

Everyone kept quiet and Aiden immediately walked in. That fool came in drinking alcohol. What has happened to him now?

...

Aiden: Thato has a point. I know that most people are against Khumo knowing the truth especially after I've told everyone that Khumo sometimes gets a mental breakdown but both Thato and I know Khumo more than everyone else. Khumo is stronger than you all think. Yes, she will get hurt by the news of Aunt Freya but she will overcome the sadness and really be the one to heal your wife, Mr T.

Mr T: Is she really that strong?

Martin: Yes, is she that strong?

Aiden: Strong enough to plan the deaths of The Jones and her own death.

Me, Mr T and Martin: WHAAAAAATTTTTTTTTT?????

Aiden: You have heard me.

Mr T: Is she really planning to kill herself or is it the alcohol talking right now, Aiden?

Aiden: Yes. She is. Your daughter is really selfish. She didn't think about me at all.

Me: Aiden, what did you hear? What if it's just a misunderstanding?

Aiden: I know what I heard. She told me that she wants to die with The Jones.

Me: Are you sure that's what you heard?

Aiden: Yes, I know English. I heard her loud and clear.

Me: (Cries) No. I don't believe you. Khumo would never do that. She wouldn't leave me like that. You are bad. I don't like you.

...

I ran to my bedroom.

...

[Mr T]

I can't let her die with The Jones. Is she that mad at everyone? Should we just tell her everything so that she may forgive us and live?

...

Me: I... need to see My Little Diamond. She... she is very mad at everyone that's why she wants to die with The Jones.



Martin: I hear you. Well, we should go see her right away. Dean Jones is still hospitalized and I don't think he'd wake up anytime soon.

Me: You are right. We should find a way to get into the house. That house is mine and I built it with my own hands. I have to go see my daughter right away.

Aiden: How do you even know that she's back in that house? She is hospitalized, remember?

Me: Where is your head right now, Aiden? You are the one who told us that she went back to that house with Kelsy's husband.

Aiden: Oh... I... Yes, I did. (Laughs) I'm a mess, aren't I? She... your daughter did me wrong.

Martin: Brother, let's go. Aiden is drunk. We are wasting our time with him.

Me: You are right. Let's go.

...

We left the house.

## Chapter 34

[Some Minutes Later]

[Thato]

Hold on, I forgot to tell my dad what Khumo said about Mr Jones. I blame Aiden for speaking nonsense and distracting me.

...

I wiped off my tears and went back to my dad's study. I found Aiden sleeping on the floor. How drunk is he? He's so annoying.

...

Me: Aiden, wake up.

...

He didn't hear me.

...

I knelt down next to him and shook him but he still didn't wake up. I was really getting frustrated. Aiden is never like this so why would he do this tonight?

...

I ran back to my bedroom to call Khumo.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Khumo: You love your new phone, don't you? Aren't you tired of talking to me?

Me: It's important.

Khumo: What is it?

Me: Are you really going to die with The Jones?

Khumo: Did that fool say that?

Me: Which fool?

Khumo: Aiden, who else?

Me: Yes, he told us.

Khumo: Us?

Me: Yeah. He told us.

Khumo: You and...?

Me: Me, my dad and your dad.

Khumo: WHATTTT????

Me: Yes, he came in drinking alcohol and told us what you said to him.

Khumo: I thought that he understood English. Or was I not speaking English?

Me: What do you mean?

Khumo: I never said that I am going to die with The Jones. Does Aiden want my family to die again?

Me: Did you really not say it?

Khumo: Yes, I didn't say all those things. Aiden misunderstood me. That fool even hung up on me.

Me: I see. Well,...

Khumo: I'm coming there. Tell everyone that I'll explain myself.

Me: Aiden is sleeping on the floor and our fathers are not here.

Khumo: Are they not in the house?

Me: I... I don't know. I'll check.

...

I went to the footage/control room and checked the footage. I just wanted to see if they went out or not. I saw what I wanted to see.

...

Me: They left the house in a hurry. They must be coming over to you.

Khumo: WHAT???? Dean Jones is home and the house is surrounded by dangerous people. Why would they come here even after knowing that Dean Jones came home?

Me: I... well...

Khumo: You didn't tell them, did you?

Me: I'm sorry, Khumo. I was really going to tell my dad but found him with your dad and got distracted by the sadness in your dad's eyes and I also got distracted by how handsome his real face is. He looks...

Khumo: Did my daddy remove the fake face? You need to stop my daddy and your dad.

Me: (Smiles) Wow, you have finally referred to him as your daddy. You've been so mad at him that you...

Khumo: You tend to talk too much. Stop it and focus. Did he really remove the fake face?

...

“BAM BAM BAM”

...

Me: Yes, he did. You...

...

“BAM BAM BAM”

...

Me: Khumo, what's going on? That's the sound of a gun.

...

“BAM BAM BAM”

...

Khumo: I don't care how you get him up but just make sure that Aiden wakes up or else I might really die tonight.

Me: Khumo...



He activated the loudspeaker.

...

Me: Khumo?? Please say something. We are worried about you.

Aiden: Khumo??????

Voice: She will be fine. I'll take care of her. Just make sure that you help in any way possible.

Aiden: Who... Are you Kelsy's husband, Lee?

Voice: Yes, it's Lee.

Aiden: What has happened over there?

Voice: It's a mess.

Aiden: What happened to my wife?

...

Kelsy's husband just giggled and kept quiet.

...

Aiden: Heyyy, say something. Is Khumo okay?

Voice: I tend to giggle a lot when I'm scared. I'm truly scared tonight. That horrible day keeps playing in my head.

Aiden: Which horrible day?

Voice: Let it go. It doesn't matter.

Aiden: Is it that bad?

Voice: It is bad but not extremely bad. Khumo already killed so many people. What scares me is the fact that The Modises are coming here. They might get hurt.

Aiden: Do you know The Modises? Lee, who are you? I know that you don't like The Jones because of what they did to your family but who are you? Is your name even Lee?

Voice: Aiden, you really love Khumo, don't you?

Aiden: Yes, I do.

Voice: Thank you. I mean it.

Aiden: What... what's going on?

Voice: I will take care of everything this side but please help me save my family. I will be indebted to you. Khumo told me everything. My dad and uncle are coming here. I'm already here. Khumo is here.

Me: Wait, are you... Are you Brother Leo?

Aiden: Leo?? Is that really you?

Voice: Yes, it's me. Leo Modise.

Aiden: Uhm... Woahh. What?? How are you Kelsy's wife? You have been married for two years. Did you know Khumo? Did...

Voice: So many questions?

Me: Does Khumo know the real you? Did you find Khumo before everyone else?

Voice: Well, I was the one who begged Njabulo to date Khumo. I realized that Khumo acted a lot like my mother and sisters. I also realized that she was extremely intelligent just like my dad. I realized how her attitude and personality were exactly like mine. I had to ask Njabulo to help me. I really felt a good connection between myself and Khumo the moment I saw her.

Aiden: Hold on, but you were also mad at Njabulo just like everyone else.

Voice: I was acting because I didn't want my sister to be mad at me for asking her husband to date our other sister.

Me: So are you really married to Kelsy?

Voice: Everything is fake but I have acquired so many things as Kelsy's husband. The Jones trusts me like crazy.

Aiden: Did you not tell everyone what you have been doing because your father did not want you involved?

Voice: Yes. Father did not want his children to get too involved. I am his only eldest son so how can I not want to help him out?

Me: Wow. He will be mad at you. You need to be careful. Mr T loves his family a lot and he would die if something were to happen to you or any member of his family.

Voice: Thank you. I'll remember that. Well, I am safe for now. I just hope that my dad and uncle will not arrive anytime soon.

Aiden: Don't worry. I'll take care of that.

Voice: By the way, mom is also here.

Me & Aiden: WHAAAAAAT???? HOW????

Aiden: I need to act fast. This call already wasted so much of my time.

...

Aiden wore his shirt and left the house.

...

God, please don't let history repeat itself. Please make sure that The Modises are saved this time

## Chapter 36

[Days Later]

[Mr T]

I can't get over how smart Khumo is. That girl saved us from getting ourselves killed. That day keeps playing in my head. The Modises would have definitely died with The Jones if it was not for Khumo.

...

Well, today Khumo agreed to meet all The Modises. She was annoyed by what had happened days ago so she set a day for us to meet.

...

She finally arrived at our new home. Everyone was happy to see her but she looked very cold. We truly didn't understand whether she was happy or not. She was just emotionless.

...

Me: (Smiles) Thank you for coming.

Khumo: Mhmm.

...

She sat down.

...

Leo: Khumo, what's wrong?

Khumo: I'm the one to ask questions today. You will all give me answers.

Leo: Okay, no problem.

Me: Everyone, this is our dear Camilla but she goes by the name Khumo. Khumo, meet your mom, Freya. Your brother, Leo. Your sister, Kelly and your other sister, Jenna.

...

She looked at everyone one by one and nodded.

...

Me: They all survived. We all survived.

Khumo: And I had a miserable childhood. I have been killing people from the age of 8.

Me: I am truly sorry.

Khumo: Whose house is this?

Me: It's our house. Our family house. I know that it's not the best compared to our main house but...

Khumo: It's beautiful. No house can beat our main house so you don't have to feel bad. This house is beautiful.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

Khumo: Why didn't you ever find me? How did you survive? Where have you been? Where is Maya? Is she also alive? Why was I not told that my own mom was hospitalized for going crazy? Why did all of you try to get yourselves killed days ago? How can you believe that stupid Aiden without confirming with me first? How... I have so many questions, I really do but I want to tell all of you that I'm happy that you are alive and I mean it.

Kelly: Khumo, we are really sorry for ruining your childhood. We couldn't control what was happening. The truth is we are still alive today because of what Njabulo did.

Jenna: Yes, Khumo. Dad told us that you saw everything that happened to us on that day. We are sorry that you had to see that.

Freya: My baby, you shouldn't have seen that. Please forgive us.

Khumo: You are all stupid. You went through the worst. Those bad things were done to you but you are here apologizing to me. Stupid family. You are all stupid.

Kelly: (Giggles) We know. That's why we almost got ourselves killed days ago.

Jenna: (Smiles) Right?? Khumo, you are now my role model. You are smart. You are actually smarter than dad. How did you come up with that idea to save us like the way you did?

Khumo: I've lived my whole life protecting myself from my enemies so that was nothing. If I may ask, what were you doing there, Jenna? The same question goes to you, Kelly.

Me: You may ask them again. They were not supposed to be there at all.

Khumo: And were you supposed to be there, Tony?

Me: I... well, I... Yes. I had to go there for you. I didn't know that Dean was back.



Khumo: Couldn't you take your phone with you? Do you know how many people tried to call you just to stop you from going there?

Me: I... I am sorry. I was not thinking straight.

Khumo: I will forgive you because that was the first time you made such a stupid mistake. You have never been impulsive and I can't expect you to always be perfect. Nobody is perfect but next time think before you act.

Me: (Smiles) That just made me feel really good. Thank you for caring.

Khumo: Of course I care about you. You are my only daddy. Jenna????

Kelly???? Why were you at The Jones days ago?

Kelly: We went there to save mom. We heard that she was there and she started the whole mess.

Khumo: Trust me, she did not start the whole mess. She was doing a great job until the two of you distracted her by your presence. Are you aware of the fact that you almost got her killed?

Kelly: Yes, we are aware. We didn't know that she was doing fine so we panicked and went there.

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Letty walked in.

...

Khumo got up and smiled. I remembered Thato's words immediately when I saw Khumo smiling. Thato was right. My Little Diamond looks like me. Well, she is wearing a fake face but her smile looks exactly like mine. Tears streamed down my face as I just stared at her.

...

Khumo: Aunt Letty, what are you doing here?

Letty: I work her.

Khumo: That's not what we had agreed to. You should not be working for anyone. Focus on counseling. Focus on getting better. Focus on yourself and on your family.

Letty: (Smiles) Trust me. This is part of my counseling. It's the best one. I get to work for nice people and just be myself.

Khumo: But...

Letty: I know that you care about me a lot but please trust me. I love working for your family. They have told me everything about you. You

are strong. I never knew that you went through such horrible things until your family told me everything. I admire you and I hope that one day my children will heal and be exactly like you. Please allow me to continue working for your family. It really means everything to me.

Khumo: Okay. Fine. But please don't let anyone bully you.

Letty: (Smiles) I won't. Should I get you your favorite juice?

Khumo: (Smiles) No. I'm absolutely fine. I don't want anything.

Letty: Okay. I'll get going.

...

Khumo nodded. Letty headed to the kitchen. Khumo looked at me.

...

Khumo: Why are you crying?

Me: I... uhh...

Khumo: I know that you are crying because of my smile. You will cry more after seeing my real face.

Me: Really?

Khumo: Yes. I look exactly like you and mom.

Freya: (Smiles) Really? Do you look like your parents?

...

Khumo nodded and sat down again. I wiped off my tears.

...

Me: Ask us anything. We will give you answers.

Khumo: Okay but we also need to go back to days ago when you all went to The Jones. The Jones are aware of the fact that they have a dangerous enemy.

Me: Fine. We can talk about what had happened days ago, later after talking about what had happened to us years ago.

Khumo: Okay. Where is Maya Jones?

Me: She died.

Khumo: How? You all survived.

Me: She had survived with us but Njabulo killed her after saving us.

Khumo: How did Njabulo save you?

Me: Our bodies were thrown into the river but Njabulo got us out.

Khumo: But still... you were all shot.

Me: We were but those were fake bullets. Njabulo had changed real bullets with fake bullets.

Khumo: I'm still confused. I saw blood. How can fake bullets make all of you bleed?

Me: This is how the bullets work. They look real but they are not real at all. When they hit something, they immediately stick and release blood-like liquid. They are also able to make a perfect skin look like it has a bullet wound. They also have a very strong drug. When they come in contact with human skin, the human immediately gets drugged and pass out so when those boys shot us, everything looked real. We didn't pass away, we just passed out because of the drug those fake bullets contain. What you thought was blood, was not blood at all; it was just fake blood.

Khumo: Those men were a lot. Did Njabulo really do everything on his own and when? Did you also know that The Jones were planning to kill you? It looks like you also planned everything ahead.

Me: I promise you that we will clear everything for you today. You won't be confused after today.

Khumo: But... did... did the rape really happen?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Khumo: (Cries) It did. It did. It did.

Me: That was something Njabulo could not control. He didn't know that something like that was going to happen.

...

Khumo immediately broke down. She cried so much that we all found ourselves crying with her. But... but this is good. She should let it all out. Oh, my poor baby.

## Chapter 36

[Khumo]

I... it hurts so much. My family was always nice and they never bothered anyone so I still hate The Jones for what they did to my family members and I will not rest until I've done something to them.

...

Everyone is now crying with me. I'm embarrassed for crying because this is not how I taught myself. I should always be cold no matter what so that no one can step on me and so that I don't turn soft.

...

I quickly wiped off my tears and headed outside for fresh air. I saw Aiden outside. I quickly tried to hide but he saw me.

...

Aiden: (As He Waves) Hi.

...

He walked over to me.

...

Aiden: Is everything okay?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Aiden: I know that you are mad at me for what I did days ago but I still came here because I know that today is very important to you. I wanted to come here and support you.

Me: You almost got all my family members killed, Aiden.

Aiden: I know and I'm sorry.

Me: Your listening skills are horrible and...

Aiden: I will work on it. I will be a better person for myself and for you.

Me: I always forgive you easily that's why you never learn. This time I won't forgive you at all.

Aiden: Okay, but please allow me to be here. I won't go inside because I know that family members are only inside but I will be right here, waiting for you.

Me: Fine. I'm going back inside.

Aiden: Okay. No problem.

Me: Bye.

Aiden: Please wait.

Me: Yes?

Aiden: Khumo, it's okay to cry.

Me: No, it's not. I don't want to be a weakling.

Aiden: Crying does not mean that you are a weakling. Crying is part of helping someone heal.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Aiden: I know that you came outside because you were crying and felt embarrassed. It's really okay to cry. Today you must cry all you want. You must cry whenever you feel like crying. No one will laugh at you or call you a weakling.

Me: Will I really heal?

Aiden: Yes, all in good time. Everything will be okay.

Me: The thing is I grew up teaching myself not to cry. I grew up teaching myself to be cold. I grew up teaching myself not to smile.

Aiden, it was really horrible. I had a really horrible childhood.

Aiden: I can imagine. You will be fine. I know that you will be fine.

...

He hugged me. I really wanted to cry but I didn't. I stopped myself.

Aiden might be right. I should cry whenever I want to but I am not used to crying anytime I feel like crying so it's not easy at all.

...

Aiden: I love you. Go back inside. Don't keep everyone waiting.

Me: Okay.

...

I went back inside and sat down.

...

Me: It's good that you have all stopped crying. Shall we continue?

Freya: Yes, my dear. Let's continue but only if you are ready.

Me: I'm ready. Why was Maya disguised as me? Did you all see your doom coming?

Mr T: I felt it.

Me: You felt it so couldn't you save the entire family?

Mr T: I apologize. I was a righteous man who never hurt anyone in my life. I thought that if my security was tight, no one can come inside to

harm us. I didn't know that the security guard would betray us. He was like a family member to us.

Me: Was he the one who let those horrible people in?

Mr T: Yes, he was.

Me: I guessed it right. Well, I got rid of him.

Jenna: (Smiles) Cool. You are super cool.

...

Jenna is exactly like Thato. Is she ever serious? She finds everything cool.

...

Mr T: I used Maya because I was scared that if those people succeed in getting in, they would want to look for you until they find you so I had to disguise Maya as you just in case those people succeed in getting in.

Me: I feel like I'm the only one you saved. You could have tried to save everyone, including yourself, daddy. You thought no one would be able to get in, fine... I get it but disguising Maya as me means that you were all ready to die as long as you only saved me. Am I right?

Mr T: Well, everything happened so fast. I wasn't given enough time to plan so we had to save you first.

Freya: Yes, my baby. You had to be saved first.

Me: Is it fair, mom? Is it? Why me?

Leo: Because you are the youngest. We had to save you first.

Me: Hold on, did all of you agree on one thing, which is only saving me when things go south?

...

They kept quiet.

...

Me: (Shouts) DID YOU??

Kelly: Yes, we did.

Me: YOU ARE ALL HORRIBLE. HOW CAN YOU DECIDE FOR ME?? I WANTED TO DIE WITH ALL OF YOU!!

...

I got up and smashed the glass vase that was close to me. I was really fuming.

...

Leo: Khumo, calm down.

Me: YOU ARE ALL HORRIBLE. YOU DID ME WRONG!!!!

Freya: We don't regret saving you. We only regret the fact that you saw everything. You didn't deserve to see that.

...

I allowed myself to calm down and sat down. I spoke very calmly.

...

Me: Was Thato's father always a gangster?

Mr T: He was.

Me: Couldn't you ask for his help?

Mr T: We didn't know that he was a gangster until we got saved by Njabulo. Martin told me that he hid it from me because he didn't want to trouble me. He became a gangster just to deal with Johnny. Johnny had buried Martin's daughter alive so Martin had to become a gangster and be on the same level with Johnny. When he sent Njabulo to spy on The Jones, it wasn't because of all The Jones; he just wanted to find out how powerful The Jones are so that when he deals with Johnny, he would know everything about Johnny's supporters in case they were to come for him.

Leo: Uncle Martin was truly our blessing in disguise. He sent Njabulo to work with The Jones and spy on them. Little did he know that as time goes on Njabulo would also find out that The Jones were planning to eliminate The Modises.

Me: So couldn't Njabulo tell Thato's father what he had discovered? Did he have to act alone?

Leo: He only found out on the day The Jones were going to kill us. It was already too late and Uncle Martin was not in South Africa. He was also unreachable on his phone. Njabulo had to act fast. You can imagine how stressful it was for him.

Me: Yeah, I can imagine.

Kelly: Khumo, dad and Leo were really tortured before getting "killed" so they almost died despite being shot with fake bullets. Dad was in a coma for 8 months and Leo was supported by the machines for two years. The hospital wanted machines that were supporting Leo to be

switched off but Uncle Martin refused and turned some of his bedrooms in his house into hospital wards. He nursed dad and Leo from his house and spent so much money on them. There's nothing he didn't do to save dad and Leo.

...

I felt a lump on my throat. I tried so much to be strong but my heart could not take it anymore.

...

Me: (Cries) You have really suffered. So for how long were they in the hospital before Uncle Martin decided to take them to his house?

Kelly: Only two months.

Me: Are you telling me that the hospital wanted Leo's machines to be switched off only after two months?

...

Kelly nodded.

...

Me: They are horrible. Which hospital?

Kelly: T...

Mr T: Why are you asking about the hospital? What do you want to do?

Me: I want to burn it.

Mr T: My Little Diamond, please let it go. We are fine now. Don't do anything that would get you in trouble.

Me: Fine. Did mom go crazy because of me?

Leo: Yes, she did. We looked for you everywhere when we got better and couldn't find you. We also went to the family's other house.

Me: I used to go there when I was young and stopped because I wanted to be careful. Maybe you all went to that house only after I stopped going there. I'm sorry.

...

Leo sat next to me and wiped off my tears.

...

Leo: (Smiles) Don't apologize. It's all good.

Me: 4 years ago when I was 18 years old, I remember Aiden asking Thato if Mr T and his family were completely okay. I didn't know that Aiden was talking about my daddy and everyone else.



Leo: Of course you didn't know. We were also wrong for not telling Aiden and Thato everything. I believe that we would've found you sooner had we told Aiden and Thato everything.

Me: I also believe the same thing. So what had happened 4 years ago when Aiden asked Thato if you were all completely fine?

Kelly: Mom has always went crazy then got better so 4 years ago dad had a mental breakdown when mom almost took her life while she was mentally unstable. Dad had a mental breakdown that almost killed him. Seeing how mom was lying on the floor, without moving made dad reach a breaking point that almost killed him. The entire family went back to square one. Seeing our parents in that condition brought back that horrible day to us. That horrible day could not stop playing in our heads. I don't know what could have happened to us 4 years ago if it wasn't for Uncle Martin and Aiden's father.

...

I knelt down and just cried.

...

Jenna: Khumo, don't cry. We are fine now.

Khumo: You are not. Leo could not stop thinking about that horrible day when he was scared days ago. You are all pretending to be fine. You are not able to forget that day just like I'm not able to forget it. It has been 14 years but we still can't forget.

Kelly: Sometimes something triggers it. We really want to forget but sometimes something takes us back to that day.

Freya: She's right.

Me: So what would help all of you heal completely?

Mr T: Their doom.

Me: Pardon?

Mr T: The Jones' doom.

Me: I am really sorry for everything. I'm also sorry for not listening to all of you sooner. I will make things right. I will give you happiness.

Mr T: Why don't you let me take care of everything?

...

I wiped off my tears and looked at him.

...

Me: The more the merrier. Let's help one another. We want to help you.

Leo: She's right. We don't want you to do everything alone.

Mr T: Fine but please be very careful.

Me: Trust me. We will be careful.

...

We shared a family hug. It felt so nice to be hugged by my own family members. Their hugs are so warm. I enjoyed the moment. I was able to smell my family members and touch them again after 14 years. It was the best feeling ever. Let's now put an end to everything and get rid of The Jones forever.

## Chapter 37

[Khumo]

After a chat with my family members, all our loved ones were invited over. It was an amazing time. To be honest, I never experienced such an amazing thing so I kept thinking like I was just probably dreaming and that I would wake up and realize that I am still all alone. Everything truly felt unreal.

...

Well, I also removed my fake face and showed everyone my true face. Everyone complimented me on my good looks and Aiden was literally going crazy. He couldn't stop complimenting me, smiling, touching my face and staring at me. It was really awkward but I also liked it a lot.

...

I was chilling in one of the bedrooms when Thato joined me.

...

Thato: Khumo, are you okay?

Me: (Smiles) I'm just a little overwhelmed but in a good way.

Thato: (Smiles) You are truly beautiful. The fake face also looked good on you but your real face is more beautiful.

Me: (Giggles) You've told me that like 100 times, remember?

...

She laughed and hugged me.

...

Thato: Sorry, I'm just really happy. I've been around your family for so long and I never saw them happy like today. I have also been around you for so many years and I have never seen you happy like today. I love it when the people I care about and love are happy. It's truly amazing.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. You are an amazing person. Thank you for always sticking around.

...

She broke off the hug and looked at me.

...

Thato: (Smiles) I love you so so so so much.

Me: (Smiles) I love you too, Thato. I mean it.

...

We shared a hug again and I felt like crying but thank God I was saved by Njabulo. He barged in without knocking.

...

Njabulo: Khumo, Khumo, Khumo, what had happened days ago?

...

I broke off the hug and looked at him.

...

Me: You should always knock. Do you want to see us naked?

Njabulo: Sorry but it's not like you are naked.

Thato: But still. You must learn to knock.

Njabulo: Okay, okay. I'm sorry. I'm just curious. What happened days ago? I just heard that you saved everyone from getting killed.

Me: Why don't you ask your wife?

Njabulo: She's still mad at me.

Me: So who told you about the things that took place days ago? That person should have told you the entire story.

Njabulo: Nobody knows all the details like you.

Me: Leo knows all the details. He was with me when everything started. Ask him.

Njabulo: He's mad at me for something.

Me: Why are those two fools always getting mad at someone like you?

Thato: Two?

Me: Kelly and Leo.

Thato: Oh.

Me: Njabulo, this is what happened days ago.

...

[Flashback]

[Khumo]

I was in the kitchen when I got a message from Kelsy's husband asking me to meet him in one of the secluded bedrooms upstairs. I had agreed to come back home with him because of what him and Aiden told me at the hospital. I was told that Kelsy's husband actually hates The Jones just like me.

...

Well, I went to where I was called, got in and closed the door.

...

Me: What's going on? Is everything okay?

Him: I need to tell you everything.

Me: What is it?

...

He locked the door.

...

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: I want to reveal my identity to you.

Me: Why? Why now? You refused to tell me when we were at the hospital.

Him: I'm feeling uneasy. Did you see how tight the security is because of Mr Jones? He came back and immediately tightened the security.

Me: Isn't it because he believes that he has a dangerous enemy?

Him: Yes but I feel the same way I felt on that day. I didn't understand this feeling back then but now I know that it's a sign that something bad is going to happen.

Me: What on earth are you talking about?

Him: Let me borrow your watch.

Me: My... no. It's...

Him: I know that it's connected to the secret room. The Modises used to have the same watch but yours is now different because you changed it but I know that it's still connected to the secret room. I have the card but the card can only work with the watch.

...

I took steps backwards.

Me: Who are you? Trust me. I won't let you fool me. I will kill you. I'm not scared of anyone.

Him: It's me... Leo. We are running out of time. Let me use your watch. Mine is no longer connected to the secret room since you changed things. I tried to go to the secret room so many times and failed.

...

He didn't wait for me to talk. He came closer to me and took off my watch. Boy, was I not shocked?

...

He took out the opening card and did what had to be done to make the secret room's door appear. He opened the secret room, grabbed my hand and led the way.

...

We arrived in the secret room and he revealed his identity to me. He told me that he is my brother Leo Modise. I didn't have words at all but I still remained cool.

...

Him: Won't you say something?

Me: I... ehh... well... I will embrace you later if you are really my brother but for now I need to know why you feel like something bad will happen.

...

We were interrupted by Thato's call. I was shocked when Thato told me what Aiden did and said. Thato also told me that My daddy and Uncle Martin were coming over to The Jones.

.

.

\*\*Call Conversation to be found in Chapter 34\*\*

.

.

As I was talking to Thato, Kelsy's husband turned on the computers and we were able to see what was happening outside the secret room. Well, I finally believed that Kelsy's husband was indeed my brother. I mean, he made the secret room's door appear, opened the secret room and also turned on the computers in the secret room... only a family member of mine can do this. It is very evident. Kelsy's husband is really my brother.

...

There was a woman who started shooting at everyone outside. She looked fearless and I was charmed by how she was actually wearing a belt of different guns and shooting like a pro.

...

Me: (Smiles) That woman is fearless. I like her a lot. That's power. I am truly impressed. She's fearless just like me. Look at her guns and look at how she's killing people like a pro. She is...

Him: Wait, that's mom.

Me: Wow, your mom is cool. She...

...

I immediately remembered that Kelsy's husband revealed his identity to me a while ago. My smile immediately disappeared as I took a backpack full of heavy guns.

...

Me: That means she... she is also my mom, right?

Him: Yes, I don't know how she is here. She was hospitalized for going crazy.

Me: What?? Crazy?? Could she be crazy right now?

Him: She looks fine. Sometimes she's fine and sometimes she's not but right now she looks fine.

Me: Don't worry. History will not repeat itself. Please don't leave the secret room visible to the eyes of others.

Him: Please be careful.

Me: (Smiles) You look scared. Relax. I got this.

...

I ran outside.

...

I was still on the call with Thato so she heard gunshots and panicked. Kelsy's husband joined me. We helped his mom... I mean, she is also my mom, right? She obviously has a fake face on that's why I couldn't recognize her from the beginning.

...

Things were now getting hectic because The Jones were now retaliating so I put my phone down after telling Thato to make sure that Aiden wakes up. I became very serious. I won't let history repeat itself.

...

[Some Time Later]

My daddy and Uncle Martin also arrived. I was now getting scared. I also realized how my daddy was here with his real face. From where I was hiding with my brother, I could see everything. We didn't know if Mr Jones saw my daddy but he was secretly heading to where my daddy and uncle were hiding. Two girls also came running and diverted the attention of my brother's mom to them.

...

Me: Leo, who are...

Him: It's Kelly and Jenna. This is bad.

Me: Very bad. Are they mad? How can they come here just like that?

Him: At least they are not showing their real faces. It looks like dad took off the fake face.

Me: Let's hope that he was not seen by anyone. His hiding spot is perfect.

Him: But did you see how Mr Jones was heading to dad and uncle's hiding spot?

Me: Yes, but please don't worry. I won't let anyone get hurt or get caught. I will also destroy the entire footage immediately after this.

Him: Aiden, Aiden's father and Thato also arrived. They are hiding behind that other wall.

...

He pointed.

...

Mr Jones realized how Mrs Modise was distracted by Kelly and Jenna so he attempted to shoot her. I left everything with my brother and ran to Mr Jones.

...

Me: DAD, WHAT IS GOING ON? STOP IT!!!!

...

I was in tears and acted like I didn't know what was really going on. Everyone stopped shooting but Mr Jones lost many people who work for him. There were so many dead bodies lying around and the pool of blood was too much.

...

Mr Jones: I don't know why this is happening. I...

...

Trust Mrs Modise to jump on Mrs Jones. She beat her black and blue. I let it happen because when Mr Jones attempted to walk over to Mrs Modise, I hugged him and cried even more so, he focused only on me and before he knew it, The Modises and The Smiths had disappeared. I was grateful that The Modises and The Smiths were able to tell that I diverted Mr Jones' attention so that everyone can be saved.

## Chapter 38

[Present Time]

[Khumo]

Me: Yes, Njabulo. That's what happened.

Njabulo: Wow, I really missed out, didn't I?

Me: Yes, you did.

Thato: Where were you?

Njabulo: Cape Town. I was there to see a specialist.

Thato: Oh, for your father?

Njabulo: Yes. My father is very sick and I blame The Jones for torturing him and controlling him all these years.



Me: I trust your father. He will get well soon. The Jones will be dealt with. Did you see how many men they already lost?

Njabulo: Yes, I was told by Mr Jones. They lost many people who work for them.

Me: So it's really our time to strike before they get more men.

Thato: You have a point, Khumo. We shouldn't give The Jones a chance to get more people to work for them.

Me: Absolutely.

Njabulo: Did your mom really jump on Mrs Jones and beat her up?

Me: Yes, she did. It was so sudden but I liked it a lot. Mrs Jones' body is still hurt from all the beating she received on that day.

Thato: (Laughs) I wish that I could see her.

Njabulo: So... do you think that Mr Jones saw your father's face?

Me: I doubt. He hasn't said anything to anyone.

Thato: Did you take care of the footage as you said you would?

Me: Yes, I had to.

Njabulo: Are you sure that they don't suspect you though?

Me: Yes, I'm sure. Look, I need to go. I killed my bodyguards in order to come here.

Thato: Wait, do you have bodyguards?

Njabulo: Where do you live, Thato? Khumo told us days ago. Mr Jones got bodyguards for her after that night.

Thato: Oh, I must have missed that. But... how will you explain killing your bodyguards, Khumo?

Me: Uhh, do I have to explain that when I'm not even suspected?

Thato: I... this is now getting scary. What if they find out the truth about you? You live with them so I am getting scared.

Me: Leo and Njabulo are always there with me. Don't worry.

Thato: Didn't Johnny try to kill Njabulo before? How can you go back there, Njabulo? Are you crazy?

Me: Johnny tried to kill him for a completely different reason.

Thato: What reason?

Me: I... well... Njabulo was dating Johnny's girlfriend.

Thato: What?? You are a womanizer, Njabulo. Kelly is your wife.

Me: He did it to divert Johnny's attention. Johnny was too focused on getting me and doing silly things to me so Njabulo dated Johnny's girlfriend to divert Johnny's attention.

Njabulo: Khumo, I never told anyone the real reason why Johnny tried to kill me so how did you know that?

Me: I have my own ways of finding out what I want to find out.

Njabulo: You are truly smart. But please don't say anything to Kelly. She doesn't know that someone tried to kill me before. I don't want to worry her.

Me: Did everyone really not tell her about that day?

Njabulo: She knows but she doesn't know that I am the one Johnny wanted to kill.

Me: Shouldn't she know?

Njabulo: I don't want to trouble her. I love her a lot and I don't like seeing her hurt.

Thato: (Smiles) And I'm sure that she loves you too.

Me: It's quite evident. She's truly into you.

Njabulo: I know. I'm the luckiest man alive.

...

My phone started ringing. I looked at Thato then looked at Njabulo.

...

Me: It's Mr Jones. I need to leave.

Njabulo: Take the call first. If you don't, he'll definitely send people to look for you.

Me: You have a point.

...

I answered the call and reassured Mr Jones that I'll be home soon. I didn't tell him anything about the bodyguards dying because I didn't want him to worry and send people to look for me.

...

[Some Time Later]

I arrived at home and Kelsy was outside waiting for me.

...

Kelsy: You were with him, weren't you?

Me: Who are you talking about?

Kelsy: Aiden.

Me: No.

Kelsy: Do you think that I'm stupid? Aiden blocked me on WhatsApp. He obviously did it for you.

...

I attempted to walk in and she stood before me.

...

Me: What is it, Kelsy?

Kelsy: I love Aiden. Can't you dump him for me?

Me: I'm not in a relationship with Aiden. You also have a husband. Are you mad?

Kelsy: I also love my husband but he spends so much time with you. Why are you always taking my men from me? Give back Aiden to me.

Me: Step aside.

Kelsy: Aiden is the one who bought you a ring, right?

Me: I don't know what you are talking about.

Kelsy: Did he propose? Is that why you are wearing his ring?

Me: I am really lost. I'm not in a relationship with Aiden.

Kelsy: I won't let you be happy with him, trust me on this one. I will turn your life upside down.

...

I pushed her aside and walked in. She followed me in the house but couldn't say anything else because Mr Jones, Mrs Jones, May, Liam, Johnny's wife Nandi, Johnny's children Sofia, Arabella, David and Alfonso were in the house.

...

Mr Jones: Dear, why are you alone? Where are the bodyguards?

Me: They are dead.

...

Everyone was shocked. All 10 pairs of eyes were looking at me.

...

Mr Jones: What do you mean?

Me: They were killed right in front of me.

...

Mr Jones got up. He looked extremely worried.

...

Mr Jones: When? How? Who killed them?

Me: Earlier on. They were shot dead. I don't know who killed them.

Mr Jones: How can you remain so calm after what happened?

Me: Didn't you tell me that I have nothing to worry about? Days ago when I asked you why so many people were killed inside your yard, you told me that I had nothing to worry about.

Mrs Jones: Did he really say that to you?

Me: Yes. So I have nothing to worry about, right mom?

...

Mrs Jones looked furious. She definitely killed Mr Jones in her head. She stormed out. She headed upstairs. Mr Jones went after her.

...

May: I thought that you were smart, Khumo. I was wrong. You almost died but you didn't worry just because dad told you that you had nothing to worry about. (Laughs) Wow. What a fool.

Nandi: Khumo, my dear. When your dad told you that you had nothing to worry about, he didn't mean that you should keep quiet when you are in a dangerous situation.

...

Why is Thato's mom getting involved? Why is she even talking to me? I don't like her at all and I will teach her a big lesson.

...

Well, Johnny's family members are living with us ever since Mr Jones came home from the hospital. Mr Jones was worried that his enemy might be strong so his way of protecting Johnny's family members was by letting them live with us. He also believes that Daniel and Oliver did not run away. He was mad when he found out what they did to me but he believes that the same people who took Johnny are the same people who took Oliver and Daniel.

...

Mr Jones is smarter than all his family members so when he came back, he was able to check the footage of what had happened inside and outside the house on the day Oliver and Daniel tried to harm me. Mr

Jones also saw how Oliver was carried to the car by Daniel; and how Daniel got shot by a mysterious man, which is Mr T; he also saw how Mr T forced me into the car by pointing a gun at me. So when dealing with Mr Jones, we will have to be extremely careful. He can be smart sometimes and even add 1 and 1 together.

...

Well, I am still trying to understand how he was able to find a footage that I had deleted and I am worried that he might be able to get the footage I deleted on the day there was a bloodbath here. Is there a specific person helping him? I used to delete footages and nobody was ever able to retrieve them so who was able to retrieve the footage I had deleted on the day Oliver and Daniel tried to harm me? It can't be Mr Jones alone. There must be someone helping him secretly.

...

I have not said any of this to my loved ones because I wanted to figure it out on my own but should... should I be worried? Should I tell my loved ones? At least Mr Jones does not know that I know what he knows.

## Chapter 39

[Mr Jones]

I followed my wife to the bedroom and she was extremely mad at me. I sat down next to her.

...

Me: What could I have done? She's our innocent daughter and I didn't want to trouble her?

Sarah: But, did you have to tell her that she had nothing to worry about? Do you want us to lose her like the way we lost Maya?

Me: Must you always bring Maya into everything? I told you that I will find her. Njabulo is helping me day and night.

Sarah: Dean, you are delusional. Maya is gone and she's never coming back.

Me: I don't believe that. I will find her.

Sarah: Like the way you found Oliver, Daniel and Johnny?

Me: Come on. Don't be like that.

Sarah: You are becoming weak, Dean and it worries me.

Me: I'm not becoming weak.

Sarah: So where's Maya?

Me: I...

Sarah: Where's Johnny and my sons?

Me: Sarah, we...

Sarah: Who are the people who wants to kill us so bad?

Me: I...

Sarah: Why can't you just tell our daughter, Khumo the truth so that she can know how to save herself when in danger?

Me: Will you give me a chance to...

Sarah: NO!!!! STOP BEING WEAK!!!!

...

She was getting on my nerves simply because she didn't want to give me a chance to reply. I was getting mad so I got up and left the room. I met Khumo outside our room.

...

Khumo: Dad, is everything okay?

Me: Uhm... yes.

Khumo: Everyone says that I was wrong for remaining calm when the bodyguards were killed. Sorry, dad.

Me: No. it's my fault but how did you survive?

Khumo: I acted dead. That's how I survived.

Me: Are you serious?

Khumo: Yes, those people shot us from outside the car so when they came inside the car, I had already acted dead. I had applied the blood of another bodyguard on me and I looked dead so those men left after realizing that we all died.

...

It looks like everyone in the house was listening to my conversation with Khumo. They walked in on us. My wife also came out of the bedroom.

...

Sarah: Was it that bad, Khumo?

Khumo: Yes, mom. It was.

May: I don't like you but kudos to you for acting dead. At least you knew how to save yourself.

Khumo: But unfortunately the bodyguards died because of me. Two bodyguards died protecting me with their own bodies.

Me: Don't blame yourself. You did nothing wrong.

Nandi: Where did you get clean clothes?

Sarah: She always carry extra clothes in her car.

Nandi: Smart girl.

May: Unfortunately today she was not smart.

Khumo: Well, the extra clothes I had with me did not "survive" so I went inside some store to buy the clothes that I'm wearing right now.

Kelsy: Wow, you truly almost died. Your car has so many bullet holes.

Me: What did you say? When did you see her car?

Kelsy: Uhh... when I was outside with her.

Sarah: Couldn't you tell us, Kelsy?

Kelsy: Well, I was going to. I got distracted. Sorry, mom.

...

We all rushed outside to see Khumo's car. I was left scared. Everyone was shocked. Khumo truly almost died and she kept quiet about it. Does she have to be too obedient and innocent? Goodness me. This is shocking.

...

Sarah: (Cries) Oh my goodness. This is bad.

May: I feel sorry for the bodyguards that protected you with their bodies. They obviously died a horrible death.

Khumo: I also feel sorry for them.

Nandi: So Khumo, where are they? Where are the bodies of the bodyguards?

Khumo: I was scared to drive a car full of dead bodies so I pushed them out of the car so that I can drive the car and act like nothing happened.

Me: Driving that car is dangerous. How can you do that?

May: She is stupid. That car could have exploded and...

...

Before May could finish talking, Khumo's car exploded right in front of us. Our jaws dropped. We were in serious shock and now Khumo was

starting to get scared. I saw the fear in her eyes. It all started to kick in. She was now having a panic attack and failing to breathe.

...

Me: Khumo, calm down. Everything is fine. You are fine.

Sarah: My baby, calm down. I am begging you. You are now fine.

Khumo: Wh... I... What is it that... that... that this family is... is... not telling me?

Nandi: Khumo, you have to breathe in and out. Forget about everything else and breathe.

...

Sarah wiped away her tears and held Khumo.

...

Sarah: My baby, please breathe. I can't lose you. Everything is fine now. You are okay so please forget about everything.

Nandi: She needs to be rushed to the hospital.

Sarah: Nandi, you are a doctor. What is wrong with my baby girl?

Nandi: Don't worry. She will be fine. Everything horrible that she went through today is starting to kick in. There are some people who are always okay when something bad is happening and only start to feel affected later once everything kicks in. Khumo is also like that. She looked calm when she told us what had happened to the bodyguards but now the explosion of her car made everything kick in. She is not breathing properly so she's going to need to be hospitalized. She needs the oxygen mask ASAP.

Me: So what are we waiting for? Let's take her to the hospital.

Sarah: Let's rush her inside. Call the doctor and explain everything to him. He will know what to do.

Me: He? Which doctor. My doctor is a woman.

Sarah: Dean, call my doctor. He's good with everything.

Me: Oh, okay.

...

Khumo immediately lost consciousness.

...

Since when does Sarah have a male doctor? She keeps getting on my nerves this night.



...

[May]

When Khumo's car exploded, we all tried our best to protect ourselves but somehow some debris hurt my arm but nobody seemed to care. Everyone focused only on Khumo. My arm is bleeding but no one is aware because I am not as important as Khumo. Couldn't Khumo die with the bodyguards? Why was she so lucky? Does God favor her that much? I'm truly hurt but I'm making a promise to myself this night. I won't rest until I have killed Khumo or pushed her to death. I hate her so much. She is always taking everything away from me. She is taking my spotlight all the time.

...

When Khumo was rushed into the house. I went to my bedroom. I was really fuming because even my boyfriend, Liam is only focusing on Khumo just like everyone else. It's annoying.

## Chapter 40

[Liam]

I don't know how nobody else realized that May is actually hurt and bleeding. I saw it and I don't care. I wish that debris had gone into her eye and made her go blind. I can't stand that girl.

...

I got to May's bedroom and had to start acting as always.

...

Me: Hey, babe.

May: Liam, do you like Khumo?

Me: And why are you asking me that question?

May: You...

Me: I know that you got hurt. I saw everything but I had to act like I like Khumo and care for her.

May: Why? I'm your girlfriend.

Me: Yes, but listen to me. You don't care about Khumo and I know that you want to get rid of her. I had to act like I care about her so that I can help you with anything.

May: But you... hold on, did you say that you know that I want to kill Khumo?

Me: Yes, I know.

May: And how do you know?

Me: I know you very well. You are the love of my life. I can tell when you are happy and when you are not happy.

May: (Smiles) You really know me. You are the best.

Me: So why do you want to kill Khumo?

May: Because I hate her. She steals my spotlight all the time. She took everything from me.

Me: Why does everyone like her? She's bad.

May: (Laughs) Do you want the truth?

Me: Yes, babe.

May: The truth is Johnny's entire family hate Khumo except for that stupid Sofia. Sofia is such a bore. Why can't she just hate Khumo just like her entire family members?

Me: Does Nandi also hate Khumo?

May: Yes, Johnny's wife also hates Khumo.

Me: What's everyone's reason for hating Khumo?

May: I don't know. There's probably no reason.

...

Wow, I knew that Johnny's children excluding Sofia are not Khumo's fans at all but I didn't know that Johnny's wife, Nandi also hates Khumo. How can they just hate Khumo without a reason? What kind of madness is this?

...

Me: (Smiles) Well, the truth is I also hate Khumo.

May: (Smiles) Do you?

Me: Yes, babe. I do. I don't like how Mr and Mrs Jones care only about her.

May: Thank you, babe. You are the best. You always get me.

Me: So please don't forget to include me in your plan of killing Khumo. I would do absolutely anything for you.

...

She smiled and kissed my cheek.

...

Me: How's your arm?

May: I took care of the wound. I'm getting there.

Me: You will be fine, baby.

May: Thank you. (Smiles) I love you so much.

Me: (Smiles) I love you more.

...

Every time I am nice to May, I feel like vomiting. What a disgusting thing to do? But... a man's gotta do what a man's gotta do. I don't have a choice.

...

[Letty]

I can't get Khumo on the phone. I guess that her plan went well. Yes, I know that Khumo had planned everything before coming to her parents' house. She killed the bodyguards and made it look like it was done by someone else. Actually she risked her life to make everything perfect and to make sure that she doesn't get suspected. Well, I just hope that she is okay. I don't want to dwell on what she did but... I... I am scared. The Jones are very dangerous so I wonder if Khumo can remain safe always.

...

Khumo's mom, Freya walked in.

...

Freya: You are always worried. Please be at ease. Feel at ease and just be happy.

Me: (Smiles) You know me very well.

Freya: Of course I do. You and I have become best friends but you still refuse to stop working for me.

Me: Freya, I am very scared.

Freya: Why?

Me: Are we not making a mistake by letting Khumo stay there? Sooner or later The Jones will know that the same people who saved me and my

entire family members are the same people who wants them dead. Won't they connect the dots and start suspecting our Khumo?

Freya: (Smiles) I know that you care a lot about Khumo. Khumo has told me how you have taken care of her all these years. She also told me that you always found a way to save her from Johnny. I am truly grateful. You are a good person, Leticia. I want you to always be happy. I trust Khumo and I will fight to never go crazy again. Actually I don't think that I can go crazy again. I have finally seen my baby girl and she's very strong.

Me: Do you think that I am worrying for nothing?

...

Freya nodded and held my hand.

...

Freya: Please feel at ease. I will never let history repeat itself again.

Me: (Smiles) You are now a strong woman. I like that.

Freya: You went through a lot because of my family and now your husband is sick. I...

Me: Please don't do that. Your family have suffered more than my family. Your baby girl basically raised herself. She learned to be cold from a young age. Your family suffered more than my family.

Freya: (Giggles) You and I probably have this conversation every day and we never get anywhere. Have you noticed?

Me: (Laughs) I have. I guess we should stop it. It doesn't matter who suffered more or less. All that matters is that we are now okay.

Freya: You are absolutely right. Should I make my special tea for us?

Me: What's the use? You don't want to teach me how to do it.

...

We both laughed.

...

Freya: Don't you want Johnny's finger?

Me: Huh?

Freya: Do you not want Johnny's finger?

Me: I... I don't follow.

Freya: Don't worry. I got you.

...

She smiled and winked at me. What on earth is she trying to say? Johnny's finger? I... well... oh...

...

[The Next Morning]

[Mr Jones]

My wife's doctor was able to save Khumo last night and I am grateful. I woke up feeling better but suddenly heard someone screaming outside.

...

My wife and I rushed outside only to find everyone in the family outside excluding Khumo. The look in everyone's faces were scary.

...

Me: What happened?

Nandi: (Cries) It's... it's my husband's finger. That's Johnny's finger.

...

She said that pointing at a black plastic bag that was on the floor.

...

Sarah: I... Nandi. Is there a finger inside the plastic bag?

Nandi: Yes, there is. I saw it.

Me: So how can you be sure that it's Johnny's finger?

...

She took out her phone and showed us a picture of Johnny's hand.

...

Nandi: This is a picture my husband took with my phone after getting my name tattooed on his middle finger. That middle finger is inside that plastic bag.

...

She said that pointing at the plastic bag again.

...

Alfonso: Mom is right. The finger belongs to dad.

Arabella: For real? Is it really dad's finger?

David: I also recognize it.

...

Sofia and Arabella cried with their mother. I quickly checked the finger inside the plastic bag and immediately recognized it as Johnny's finger.

...

Me: Who could do this?

Sarah: The person who saved Letty and her family.

Me: Do you think that the person who saved Letty and her family is the same person who took Johnny?

Sarah: Yes, it's the same person who took Johnny and our sons.

...

I started panicking. This means that my sons' are next. My sons might also... oh, my goodness. Who is after my family? What do I do? I'm really feeling scared. How can there be someone who is more dangerous than me out there? I should... I should get in touch with all my connections. We need to find the person who is after my family before it's too late. I'm... I'm... I'm really scared and this is unlike me. I really hate this feeling.

## Chapter 41

[In The Afternoon]

[Khumo]

I know that there's someone secretly working for Mr Jones and that person is good with technology so of course I had to be extra careful yesterday when I went to my parents' house. I had to plan everything in advance. Aunt Letty was the one who sent people to "kill" me and the bodyguards... well, everything was under my instruction so I'm the one who killed the bodyguards so when the people sent by Aunt Letty arrived, the bodyguards were already dead but still in the car with me so I wore a protective gear that covered me from head to toe and sent a message to Aunt Letty to tell her that I'm ready and that the people she had sent can start shooting the car. There was no way I'll get hurt because I was wearing a protective gear. When killing the bodyguards, I used a gun to shoot them and then when the people sent by Aunt Letty arrived, they also used guns to shoot at us (me and the dead bodyguards) inside the car. So my plan had a perfect balance; The Jones will not know that I was actually involved because I was really inside the car when the shooting began. Street cameras can be checked, I don't care; I planned well.

...

Well, my other reason for killing the bodyguards was to set a trap for the person giving me sleepless nights... I am talking about the person who is able to retrieve deleted data for Mr Jones. I will not spare that person. He will fall into my trap very soon and this is how....

...

I went to Mr Jones' study. He looked very stressed and uneasy so it was a beautiful sight to see. I got the satisfaction from just seeing him miserable. Wait, why is Liam here?

...

Me: Dad, I... I would like to talk to you.

Mr Jones: Okay, my baby. Come sit down.

...

I sat down next to him.

...

Me: Liam, please give us a moment... alone.

Liam: Okay. See you.

...

He got up and left and without any evidence, I already knew that Liam is the one who is secretly working for Mr Jones. I mean... why is he here? Why is he with Mr Jones? Since when are they close? Liam is just May's boyfriend and when Mr Jones met Liam for the first time after coming back from the hospital, he didn't seem to like him so what's this? Or was he acting to not like Liam all this time? Wow.

...

Me: Dad, I want us to find the people who killed the bodyguards.

Mr Jones: Yes, my dear. We are working on that.

Me: Dad, I went back to where I left the bodies and I couldn't find them. What do you think happened after I left that place?

Mr Jones: We will find out.

...

Goodness me, he's not willing to tell me anything now, is he? He's very secretive.

...

Me: Street cameras?? We should check them.

...

Well, I already deleted the street footage and the moment someone tries to retrieve it, I will get a notification on all my computers, my phones and my watch. I need that person to try to retrieve what I already deleted and it's going to be over for her or for him. Well, Liam, go do your best.

...

Mr Jones: Leave everything to me, please don't get involved. You are my innocent child.

Me: Dad, are you aware that I almost died?

Mr Jones: Yes, I am and I'm very bothered.

Me: Why are people after this family?

Mr Jones: It's jealousy.

Me: Do you think so?

Mr Jones: Yes, what else can it be? We are better and richer so people are jealous and wants to kill us.

Me: But why now? We've lived in harmony for so many years. Why now?

Mr Jones: Maybe they have been planning. I don't know, baby girl.

Me: We should call the cops, don't you think?

Mr Jones: Yes, we already did that. My men are out there trying their best to find something.

Me: What men? Why do you speak like a gangster?

Mr Jones: (Chuckles) Not at all. I'm not. I meant to say that my friends are helping me find the truth and also find Johnny and my sons.

Me: Oh. Well, I really want my brothers and uncle to be found so bad. I know that Oliver and Daniel wronged me but I don't want anything bad to happen to them that's why I was the one who decided to never come back home after escaping from the man who took my brothers.

Mr Jones: When that mysterious man shot my son and forced you in the car, how did he end up letting you go?

...



Hold on, he just said it. Did he forget that he didn't mention this to me before? I mean, I am never told anything in this house because I am "innocent".

...

Me: Dad, do you know that? How? I heard that the footage of that day was deleted.

Mr Jones: It was deleted but we were able to get it again. I saw everything that happened on that day.

Me: Are you mad at me? I'm the reason why my brothers were taken. I was only able to save myself because I was scared.

Mr Jones: No, I am not mad at you. The truth is you are in the dark about so many things. How did you save yourself?

...

Should I stress him even more? That would be fun. Let me play with him a little.

Me: I gave that man what he wanted and he let me go because he said that I am a smart person.

...

Mr Jones now looked intrigued.

...

Mr Jones: Which is? What did he want?

Me: The code that was written on the green card you gave to me years ago.

Mr Jones: WHATTTTTT???? BABY, NO!! THAT CODE COULD... MY GOODNESS!! WHAT HAVE YOU DONE??

...

I wish I could laugh at him right now. Look at his face; it's so funny.

...

Me: He wanted that code. (Smiles) But I gave him the wrong one.

...

He looked relieved.

...

Mr Jones: You did?

Me: Mhmm. You told me that I should never give that code to anyone so why would I do that?

...

He smiled and kissed my forehead.

...

Mr Jones: You are my smart child. Did you really give him the wrong code?

Me: Yes, I did.

Mr Jones: Probably that's the reason why he wanted to kill you with the bodyguards. Yes, it's him. Who could that man be?

Me: Wait, didn't you say that people are trying to kill us because of jealousy? Do you now suspect that man?

Mr Jones: I suspect him. He is jealous that's why he wanted the code...

Me: What's that code all about? Is it that important?

Mr Jones: It is. It's...

...

He paused.

...

Mr Jones: Don't say anything to anyone. You are the only one who knows about that card and the code.

Me: I won't tell anyone, I promise. I mean, I have never told anyone before so you can trust me, dad.

Mr Jones: That card has a connection to all our riches. With just saying the code to anyone, we could lose our properties, our money, our businesses, our power; we could lose everything.

...

Oh, is he serious? I didn't know at all. The Jones' riches are all in my hands. How funny is this? Do they trust me that much? Oh, daddy dearest Jones, you made a terrible mistake by trusting me with what could take you to poverty.

...

Me: Oh, I see. So how can you be that stupid, dad?

Mr Jones: Stupid? What do you mean?

Me: How can the code be written on the card? No wonder that man knows about the card.

Mr Jones: I didn't want to forget the code that's why I did that.

Me: It's like writing your bank pin on your bank card. That's stupid. You know that I am smart and doesn't forget things I've put in my head. We should make a different card and make its security very tight.

Mr Jones: You have a point. Thank you, dear.

Me: Dad, why did that mysterious man want the code? How does he even know about it?

Mr Jones: I also don't know how he knows about the card and the code.

Me: I will get to the bottom of it, don't worry.

Mr Jones: (Smiles) Thank you, my dear. You are...

...

We got interrupted by someone screaming. We rushed out of the study.

My phone and watch got a notification. I guess Liam was trying to retrieve the deleted footage. What do I do? Liam or the person screaming downstairs?

...

We got to the person that was screaming and Liam was there. Was I wrong about Liam? I mean he can't be trying to retrieve something while he's here, right?

...

Everyone else came running and my watch and phone also stopped warning me. Well, I guess the person who tried to retrieve the deleted footage is in the house right now but who could it be? Many people came here at once so who could it be?

...

May started screaming and I just saw Mr Jones hitting the floor. My main focus was on my watch and my phone so everyone was obstructing my view; I couldn't see anything else. But I stopped focusing on my watch and phone the moment I saw Mr Jones hitting the floor. I went closer to see what was happening and I saw Oliver's body lying there in a pool of blood.

...

Woahhhhhh!!!! Is this some movie? An action movie or crime movie perhaps? There's just always one thing after the other. Mr Jones got a heart attack and was rushed to the hospital.

[Mrs Jones]

What could be happening? Who did... who did this? Why is that mysterious man after my family? Oliver is dead just like that. He's really dead. He had lost so much blood when he was accidentally hit by Daniel last time so seeing how he lost so much blood again this time is troubling. This is a sight that I can never forget. My eldest son is no more and I feel so enraged.

...

Everyone was crying and I was just standing there, feeling angry. My husband was also just rushed to the hospital so I feel like I will lose all my loved ones soon.

...

[Mr T]

I got in the house and I was furious. I was mad at what my wife did. I heard that she killed Oliver and sent his body to The Jones. My plan was not to kill Oliver first. My plan was to kill Johnny first so that I can have the entire Jones feeling very worried about Oliver and Daniel being next.

...

I got to the bedroom and found my wife doing her nails.

...

Me: Why did you do that?

Freya: (Smiles) Oh, hey honey. Did you just come back now? Are you...

Me: Freya, why?

Freya: (Smiles) What are you talking about?

Me: Would you please stop smiling? I'm serious.

Freya: Mhmm.

Me: Why did you kill Oliver before I could kill Johnny?

Freya: Things were too slow for my liking. I mean, does everyone want us to wait for The Jones to get stronger and defeat us?

Me: What do you mean?

Freya: Exactly that, husband. Stop being a softie. We need to act while The Jones are weak. We have to attack every time we get the chance to.

...

Khumo walked in and Freya immediately got up and hugged her. Freya looked extremely happy. I must admit, my wife is happier ever since Khumo was found.

...

Khumo: Mom has a point. What's with you and taking forever to do something? Do you feel sorry for The Jones?

Me: I... No. I don't but how did you come here? What's going on? Do you want to get caught? You were here yesterday. Why are you here?

Khumo: Don't worry. I didn't kill anyone this time.

Me: Did you kill someone last time when you came here?

Khumo: (Smiles) Mhmm. I did. I killed the bodyguards and made it seem like it was not done by me.

Me: Why didn't anybody tell me?

Khumo: For what? I'm not a baby. I have never needed help. I know how to take care of myself.

Me: Did you clean up really well?

Khumo: Mhmm. I did. Aunt Letty, Thato's siblings and my siblings excluding Kelly helped me a lot. They were the ones who shot at the car to help me complete my plan.

Me: What? I know that you met Leo many times before but did you also meet your sister, Jenna before coming here yesterday? She acted like she was meeting you for the first time after years. Why did she fool us?

Khumo: I didn't meet her before coming here yesterday. The thing is I had instructed Aunt Letty to get me some trusted people to help me with my plan. We planned everything via messages. I didn't want strangers or the people who works for The Smiths or The Modises because I don't want them to be included in everything but I didn't know that Jenna would be among the people who shot at my car. Aunt Letty had sent the people who has my back and I am grateful.

Me: Was she also with them?

Khumo: No. She was only giving them instructions. She was with mom at uncle Martin's house.

Me: Freya???? Wow. Freya, why didn't you tell me?

Freya: (Smiles) You don't need to know everything, Hector. We had everything under control.

Khumo: She's right. Plus my siblings and Thato's siblings were there with different faces. They had fake faces on. Well, daddy... uhh... Mr Jones had a heart attack. He was rushed to the hospital.

Me: Yes, I know.

Khumo: So, what's next?

Me: Huh?

Khumo: What's next, daddy?

Me: Johnny's finger was sent to The Jones in the morning and in the afternoon Oliver's dead body was sent to The Jones. We need to take things slow. Where's the fun in doing things so fast?

Freya: (Laughs) Are you looking for fun, husband? Are you looking to have fun in a situation of life or death?

Khumo: (Laughs) Just imagine, mom. The Jones are dangerous. We can't let them bounce back. What fun is daddy looking for?

Freya: (Laughs) Right? He's something else.

Me: Heyyyy, why are you teaming up against me? Stop laughing at me.

...

They continued to laugh and walked away together

holding hands. What's really funny? Well, I am not a softie. The thing is I have realized that Leo might really be in love with Kelsy. I mean, I was angry after finding out that Leo is Kelsy's "husband" but recently I found out that he might really be in love with Kelsy. I'm conflicted. How can I be cruel to my son? What do I do? Should I still kill The Jones, including Kelsy when I know that my son is in love with Kelsy? Oh, my goodness.

...

[Khumo]

For the first time in my life, I am really really really really happy.

Having my family is the best thing ever. I know that we were separated for years but I don't feel awkward around them at all. Everything is so natural and I can tell that they love me so much.

...

I helped my mom cook.

...

Me: Mom, where's everyone else?

Freya: They went to work.

Me: Work? Isn't that dangerous for them?

Freya: Don't worry, we all work for our companies. We are never showing our faces to our employees so we work from home. The people we truly trust are the ones taking care of everything at work but they get orders from us. So there's a boardroom in the house and that's where me and my family members do our work.

Me: Oh, so when you said that everyone went to work, you were talking about them being in the boardroom right now?

Freya: (Smiles) Yes. Absolutely.

Me: You have all suffered. I just realized that as much as you survived and are strong, you are actually not free just like me. I want us to be able to live a normal life without fake faces and fake identities. It's not okay. We should all be free and happy.

Freya: That's why The Jones must die.

Me: You are absolutely right. They should die as soon as possible.

Freya: Exactly my point.

Me: I want to get a red dress and an axe. I would love to get my curly hair straightened.

Freya: Red dress? Axe? Why?

Me: I should say goodbye to The Jones.

Freya: Do you want to say goodbye in a red dress? (Laughs) People wear black to funerals.

Me: I'm different. I want a red dress, straightened hair and I also want an axe. I'm going to dress like that when I kill The Jones.

Freya: I will get you everything you want. Don't worry.

Me: I need you to help me straighten my hair but the dress and the axe will be bought by Mr Jones.

Freya: (Laughs) You are really not playing. Are you going to make him buy you a dress and axe then kill him with the axe he bought while wearing the dress he also bought for you?

Me: (Smiles) Yes so if your husband does not act fast, I will act alone.

Freya: Don't worry. Hector will do as you say. You must threaten him with your life if he does not listen to you.

Me: (Laughs) Mom, you are evil.

Freya: (Laughs) I know.

...

We laughed and continued to cook.

...

I got a call from Thato's father.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hello, Uncle.

Martin: Dear, how are you?

Me: I am fine, thanks. How are you? You sound different.

Martin: Please help my daughter.

Me: Pardon?

Martin: Thato was rushed to the hospital. She... I...

Me: Uncle, what? What happened? How do I help? I'm not a doctor.

Martin: Please come to the address I'll send. I'm there with Thato. I know that it may not be easy for you because of the bodyguards but I need you.

Me: Everyone is focused on Mr Jones. I will be there soon. I don't have new bodyguards yet. I'm coming right away.

Martin: (Cries) No. Don't... I... Be Safe... You...

...

He hung up.

...

Why did he say no? Why did he tell me to be safe? Why did he suddenly cry? What's going on? Something is off. Was I even talking to my uncle or someone else? But... but that was his voice. I... I have a bad feeling about this one. Uncle crying and saying No to me is... I don't know but I feel like something is wrong. Uncle might be the one in danger. Maybe someone threatened him and made him call me to lure me out.

Something is definitely wrong. But the question is, what do I do?

## Chapter 43

[Khumo]

I looked at my mom and she could already tell that I was bothered.

...



Freya: Is everything okay? What was the call all about?

...

I told her everything about the call.

...

Freya: It's a trap. Martin is in the boardroom with everyone else.

Me: Really?

Freya: Yes, really. You can even go and check for yourself.

Me: Now?

Freya: Mhmm. Go. I'll be right behind you. Let me take care of my pots for 5 more minutes.

Me: Okay.

...

I immediately ran to the boardroom. My memory is good so when I came to this house for the first time yesterday, I was taken on a house tour so yes, I already know my way around here.

...

I barged in and immediately saw uncle Martin... and Thato. I took out a gun and pointed it at Thato. Everyone was so shocked.

...

Kelly: Khumo, what's going on?

Martin: Is everything okay? What did Thato do to you?

Leo: Khumo, that's your cousin. What are you doing?

...

I went closer to Thato.

...

Me: Take off your jacket.

Thato: Huh?

Me: I said take off your jacket.

Thato: (Smiles) Do you like it? Is that a way to ask for my jacket?

...

She is Thato. Her smile, calmness and foolishness says it all.

...

Me: I'm not joking. Why are you smiling?

Thato: What's going on? I'm not scared of guns.

Me: I will shoot you. This is a real gun.

Thato: (Giggles) Wow, you remind me of the time when you first pointed a gun at me. You are so cool but I know you wouldn't shoot me.

...

This is truly Thato. I was just testing her by pointing a gun at her. I have been around Thato for many years and I know exactly how she replies in all situations. I have learned her and passed her. No one can trick me by pretending to be Thato.

...

I put the gun down and hugged her. For the first time in my life, I was extremely worried and shaking in my boots.

...

Jenna: Khumo, what's going on?

Me: (Cries) Who would do that to me? I'm going to kill him.

Jenna: Did what? What are you talking about?

...

I wiped off my tears and looked at Thato.

...

Me: Thank you for not changing. You are still the same Thato I met years ago when we were both 8 years old. Thank you for being the same. Thank you for being a "not in a bad way" stupid. Thank you for always driving me crazy. And... and... I'm sorry. I'm sorry for pointing a gun at you.

Thato: (Smiles) You are welcome. I don't know what this is about but... uhh... you are welcome.

...

Mom walked in and told everyone about the call.

...

Martin: Did someone really pretend to be me?

Me: He sounded exactly like you.

Martin: Is there someone who can sound exactly like me out there? Who could it be?

Freya: It's bad. This means that there's someone who knows everything about Khumo.

Martin: Right? We can't send her back to that house now. It's dangerous.

Me: No. I will go back to that house.

Freya: But baby, it's dangerous.

Me: I know but I'll be careful.

Freya: How will you be careful when you have been exposed already?

Me: Don't worry. I will get to the bottom of everything.

Martin: Dear, don't let revenge consume you. You can't go back to that house.

Me: The thing is, the person who called me also sounded like he was warning me. I... what is going on here? I'm really curious. That person surely knows me, Thato and you, uncle.

Martin: We'll look into it but please don't go back to that house.

Me: I'm not a coward. I won't let anybody stop me.

Freya: Khumo, you...

Me: There's someone who retrieves deleted data for Mr Jones. We should also worry about that person.

Leo: And you are only telling us, because...?

Me: Because I'm used to doing things by myself.

Leo: Khumo, you have us now. You have to include us in everything.

Me: Look into Liam. He's May's boyfriend and he can't be trusted. I have a bad feeling about him.

Kelly: Liam can be trusted.

Me: Do you personally know him?

Kelly: We all know him. He's Aiden's brother.

Me: Huh? And you are only telling me now, because...?

Kelly: We didn't think that it's something you needed to know.

Me: Why? Why not?

Leo: We didn't think that it's a big deal. We apologize.

Jenna: How about we start sharing every little thing from now on? We are a team and we should do things together.

Kelly: Jenna has a point.

Me: Yeah. She does.

Martin: A lot is going on. How can the person who called you sound exactly like me?

Me: He also called with your number. Where's your phone?

Martin: My phone is here.

...

He searched his pockets and couldn't find his phone.

...

Martin: Uhh... I thought that I had my phone with me. Where could it be? I remember taking my phone along. It was really in one of my pockets.

Freya: My goodness, it looks like the person who took your phone is the one who called Khumo.

Martin: But my phone security is tight. How was he able to call Khumo using my phone?

Me: It might be the same person who retrieves deleted data for Mr Jones. Think about it. That person is very good when it comes to technology.

Freya: You have a point... uhh... so, that person is obviously close with Martin and also close with The Jones.

Njabulo: I'm close with Mr Martin and also close with The Jones. It's really not me. I would never betray any of you.

Martin: I know that it's not you. You have nothing to worry about.

Leo: I'm also close with uncle Martin and also close with The Jones as Kelsy's husband. It's really not me. I would never betray my loved ones.

Martin: We know. But... but who is that person?

...

Aiden walked in. He was limping and bleeding. The guy was literally walking on his pool of blood. He fell immediately after walking in. I couldn't react because I was so shocked. I felt like I was going crazy.

...

Everyone ran to Aiden except me. I was like a statue, just standing there.

...

Martin: Aiden, Aiden, what's wrong?

Njabulo: Aiden, talk to us. What happened to you? Who beat you up like this?

Aiden: It's... it's... dangerous... I ...

...

He passed out.

...

Martin: This is not important right now. He's losing too much blood. It looks like he was also shot. Let's take him to the hospital.

Thato: Dad, you have rooms like hospital at home, remember? And your house is close by. Let's take Aiden there and treat him from home. I trust you. I've seen how you've taken care of Khumo's entire family members when they were not well.

Leo: We also have rooms like that here and I'm a professional doctor.

Martin: Yes, yes, yes. Please heal him. I'm begging you, Leo. Heal Aiden. His... his father... I...

Leo: I need you to breathe in and out. Don't allow this to get to you. I will try my best to heal Aiden.

...

He said that, carrying Aiden out of the boardroom.

...

Uncle Martin was left behind and he slowly knelt down.

...

Martin: God, not Aiden. I'm begging you. Please don't let anything happen to Aiden.

## Chapter 44

\*\*Meet Xavier - Who do you think he is??\*\*

.  
. .

[Xavier]

How smart can Khumo be? She didn't fall for my trap so I had to teach Khumo a lesson by getting rid of Aiden. She will definitely look for the person who killed Aiden and that's when she will fall into my trap.

...

One of my men walked in.

...

Him: Boss, do you think that Khumo will look for you?

Me: (Smiles) Yes, she will. I have realized that she loves Aiden a lot.

Him: Is that what you really want?

Me: What are you talking about?

Him: Do you really want Khumo to find you? She's dangerous and cold.

Me: (Giggles) Yes, I want her to find me.

Him: So what will you do to her?

Me: Don't worry about that one.

Him: Okay, boss. But...

Me: What is it?

Him: Please be very careful. That girl is not to be messed with.

Me: (Laughs) You speak like someone who know her. You have only heard about her from me.

Him: Well, I have already pictured her. I can tell that she's dangerous.

Me: And that's exactly what's exciting about her.

Him: I have a bad feeling about everything. I don't know why.

Me: Your problem is that you worry too much. Everything is going to be fine. I know those people's entire plan. They trust me so much that they didn't mind discussing everything with me. I played the game very well and I know that they will never suspect me. I'm way smarter than them.

Him: Do you think so?

Me: Yes. I know everything about them. I know about their fake faces and their plans. I could expose them to The Jones if I wanted to but that's not going to be fun.

Him: But your mom knows everything and she works with you. Don't you think that she might expose Khumo to The Jones?

Me: No. She won't. Everything is under my control.

Him: Okay, boss.

Me: Did you send Aiden's body over to them?

Him: Yes, Boss. I left the body at the gate. They must have found it by now.

Me: (Smiles) Good. Torturing Aiden was the nicest thing ever but who knew that he's weak? He died faster than I thought.

Him: He is really weak. He died fast.

...

We laughed.

...

Let me finish what Khumo started. I will get rid of all The Modises and The Smiths and they all won't see me coming.

...

[Later That Day]

[Khumo]

I was now back to my senses but extremely heartbroken. I truly truly truly love that old man, Aiden so what I saw earlier broke me and scared me so much.

...

Thato walked in my room.

...

Thato: You seem to love this room a lot. You've spent the whole day in here.

Me: My family did a good job by picking this room for me and always cleaning it up. They truly never gave up on me.

Thato: Right? They never knew if you were alive or not but still kept this room for you. They love you so much.

Me: (Smiles) I know.

Thato: You have been in your room this entire time. Don't you want to go see Aiden?

...

I shook my head.

...

Thato: Are you scared that he might not make it?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Thato: You have nothing to worry about. Aiden is now out of danger. Everyone worked together to save Aiden's life.

...

I released a sigh of relief.

...

Me: You are not joking, right?

Thato: I can never joke about something like this. Aiden is really out of danger.

Me: Wha... What about the bleeding?

Thato: Leo was able to stop the bleeding and he also removed the bullet.

Me: Aiden lost so much blood. He... I...

Thato: (Smiles) Yes, he lost so much blood but luckily his father and brother saved him. They have the same blood type as Aiden so they donated some blood to Aiden.

Me: Was their blood alone enough?

Thato: Oh, I didn't know that I have to mention everyone who donated so I just mentioned his father and brother.

Me: What do you mean?

Thato: Your mom, Njabulo, Aunt Letty and your sister Jenna also donated blood to Aiden so trust me, everything is okay. Aiden's body did not reject the blood donated to him. He's lucky to share blood type with so many people. He got blood from 6 people in total so yes, it was enough. He's very lucky.

Me: Right? That's a relief. Is Aiden now awake?

Thato: No. He's still unconscious.

Me: I don't want to see him unconscious. I will only get reminded of what had happened to my family members years ago when I was 8 years old.

Thato: I understand. Do you have any idea of who might have hurt Aiden?

...

Yes, I do. I was in my bedroom this entire time because I wanted to put 2 and 2 together. I know who hurt Aiden and I refuse to fall into his trap. This person only attacked Aiden after realizing that I didn't go to him earlier today when he called me and pretended to be Uncle Martin. I am definitely the target but I refuse to fall into his trap. I really did add 2 and 2 together but I won't tell anyone; I am waiting to hear what Aiden will say first.

...

Thato: Khumo??



Me: Yes?

Thato: Did you hear me?

Me: Uhh, I don't know who hurt Aiden. Mr Jones is hospitalized and Johnny is missing a finger somewhere. I really don't know who hurt Aiden.

Thato: I see. Well, it's okay. Don't worry too much. Everyone around here is smart. Except for Aiden's father and brother, everyone who was not here today was not informed about what happened to Aiden.

Me: Why?

Thato: Dad said that people who were not in this house today are all suspects... well, excluding The Smiths. Mr Smith and Liam would never hurt Aiden so they were called to come over.

Me: But... what about your siblings? They might feel bad for being excluded and suspected.

Thato: (Smiles) Don't worry. My siblings are not suspected. Aiden's other siblings are also not suspected. Dad said that we should not tell them anything to allow them to enjoy their vacation.

Me: Oh, did they go away?

Thato: Yes. They are out of the country so we don't want to trouble them.

Me: That makes sense. They should enjoy their trip to the fullest.

Thato: Absolutely. So with many people not involved, the person who hurt Aiden will definitely be found very soon.

Me: You are right. Thank you for the information, Thato.

Thato: (Smiles) Of course.

Me: I should go to the hospital. I don't want The Jones to suspect me.

Thato: What if the person who hurt Aiden works for The Jones?

Me: He does. He's the same person who retrieves deleted data for Mr Jones.

Thato: So, won't you be in danger?

Me: He hasn't exposed me.

Thato: And how do you know?

...

I know because he thinks that he's smart.

...

Thato: Khumo?

Me: Yes?

Thato: Please don't go.

Me: I have to.

Thato: What if something happens to you?

Me: Nothing will happen to me. Don't worry.

...

Uncle Martin walked in.

...

Martin: Sorry. The door is wide open.

Me: (Smiles) It's okay, uncle.

Martin: Don't go. You are not safe.

Me: How do you know?

...

He looked at Thato.

...

Martin: My baby, please leave us. I need to talk to Khumo.

Thato: Uhh... okay.

Martin: Please close the door on your way out.

Thato: Okay.

...

Thato smiled at me and left.

...

Me: What's going on?

Martin: I know that you are smart. You already know who hurt Aiden that's why you spent the whole day in your bedroom. You were not in the room, crying. You were definitely putting the pieces of the missing puzzle together.

Me: Do you also suspect someone closer to you? Is that why you completely broke down earlier on and even prayed to God?

...

He nodded.

...

Me: Let's talk about this tomorrow. I will go to the hospital right now.

Martin: Do you still want to go there?

Me: Yes. I have to. I really believe that The Jones are in the dark. Disappearing for this long will only make them suspect me. Oliver's funeral arrangements must also be made, remember?

Martin: Okay but please be careful.

Me: I will.

...

I left.

...

I have been in this game for so long now. I'd be a fool to fall into your trap... XAVIER!!!! Do you really want to step on my toes?? Let's go!! An eye for an eye!! You hurt Aiden so, I will make sure that someone close to you will pay big time. And if you think that I will give you the chance to expose me, you must be crazy.

## Chapter 45

[Khumo]

I went to the hospital and The Jones were doing bad. I could see how hurt everyone was. Everyone spent the day at the hospital because they were in denial about Oliver's death. I spent time with everyone and surprisingly May did not argue with me like she always does.

...

I left the hospital after some time and went to the restaurant. Everyone was so hurt and probably did not see me leaving the hospital.

...

Xavier joined me at the restaurant. I will play along. He won't know that I know everything.

...

Me: (Smiles) Xavier, how are you?

Xavier: (Smiles) I'm good, thanks. What about you?

Me: I'm okay. Shouldn't you be out of the country?

Xavier: I decided to leave tonight. Is everything okay?

Me: With me?

Xavier: Yes. You seem down.

Me: I'm fine.

Xavier: You can talk to me. I can tell that something is bothering you.

...

I faked my sadness and shed a tear. I want him to believe that Aiden is dead but I won't say it. My actions will speak for me.

...

Xavier: Why... why are you crying?

Me: It's really nothing. I'm strong.

Xavier: Did something happen?

...

I wiped off my tear.

...

Me: Xavier, let it go.

Xavier: Whatever it is, I hope that you'll get better soon.

Me: I will only get better after getting rid of the person who stepped on my toes. I have to look for him until I find him.

...

He smiled a little and quickly pretended to be sad.

...

Xavier: Who would step on your toes? I will teach that person a lesson.

Me: I will handle it alone. Don't worry.

Xavier: Are you sure?

Me: Yes. I don't want to involve anyone else.

Xavier: That's what I want. It's more fun that way, right?

Me: Pardon?

Xavier: Huh?

Me: Why did you say what you just said?

Xavier: (Nervous Chuckle) Don't worry. I must still be drunk. I can't even hear myself speaking.

Me: Uhh... oh.

Xavier: By the way, please don't tell anyone that I didn't leave the country yet.

Me: Why?

Xavier: I just don't want them to worry over nothing. I will really leave tonight.

Me: Okay, no problem.

Xavier: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

No, Xavier. You lie. You won't leave at all. You lied about leaving the country so that you can freely scheme against us. You won't see what hit you.

...

[Xavier]

My plan is perfect. By looking at Khumo, I can tell that she knows about Aiden but does not want to speak about it. Well, who cares? I was able to tell by her actions. She will definitely look for me and she will be shocked to find out that I'm the one who actually killed Aiden.

...

I got a call from that annoying Martin.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: (Smiles) Hey, how are you?

Martin: You have not left the country, why is that so?

...

My goodness, how does he know? That was quick.

...

Me: I... well, I will leave tonight.

Martin: It's good that you didn't leave. Please don't leave. We need you.

Me: I... I shouldn't leave?

Martin: Yes. Please.

Me: Why not?

Martin: We need you.

Me: Did something happen?

Martin: Yes.

Me: I am with Khumo right now. Should I come home with her?

Martin: Khumo? Are you really with Khumo right now?

Me: Yes, I am. She doesn't look okay at all but she doesn't want to tell me anything.

Martin: I thought that she went to the hospital. How is she with you?

Me: Uhh, I met her at the restaurant. I think she was indeed at the hospital.

Martin: I see. Well, I am coming there. The two of you do not need to come home together.

Me: I think we both drove to the restaurant so we won't come together. We will just follow one another.

Martin: Are you coming to my house?

Me: Yes, we are.

...

Khumo immediately got up and left.

...

Me: Uhh, Khumo just left. I don't know where she's going. Let's talk soon. I'm coming home.

Martin: But...

Me: Sorry.

...

I hung up and also left the restaurant but I couldn't find Khumo anywhere. Is she a ghost? How did she disappear so fast? Well, I'll just go see Martin.

...

I got in my car and on my way home, one of my men called me so I had to go to him because it was urgent. I'll go see Martin later.

...

[Khumo]

I arrived at uncle's house and went straight to his control/footage room. I hacked into his things and completely destroyed the signal. I did that just to be safe; I mean, what if this entire house was wired by Xavier? So better safe than sorry.

...

I went to uncle's study after messing up with the signal. I found him doing some work.

...

Martin: The signal is bad. It can only be you. So tell me, why did you do it?

Me: What was your call with him all about?

Martin: My call with Xavier?

Me: Yes. He was smiling from ear to ear. How can you do that? How can you still be okay with him after everything that he did?

Martin: Listen, you are misunderstanding me. I called him because I didn't want him to leave.

Me: Why not?

Martin: Isn't it better to keep a close eye on him and...

Me: By telling him that we need him? Why did you say that?

Martin: I had to act.

Me: Fine. What should be done? I know that the person who hurt Aiden is very close to you and you love him so much but I will not let him live. I'm that selfish.

Martin: (Sighs) I'm conflicted. What will I tell the others?

Me: Why do they have to know?

Martin: I am in a difficult position. The situation is different and difficult. I can't just kill my son now, can I?

Me: I don't care what you say, uncle. I will definitely kill that horrible son of yours. He has been pretending to be a good person and got so much information from us. He obviously know about the fake faces. He pretended to go away on vacation but guess what? He's still in the country. Why would I let such person live? Xavier Modise must die!!

## Chapter 46

[Thato]

Oh, my goodness. Through my bedroom window, I saw Khumo coming inside the house and I was so excited and decided to go and see her. I saw her going to my dad's study so I followed her but I stood outside because I realized that she was extremely angry so I eavesdropped on Khumo and dad's conversation and heard everything. I was so shattered.

...

I... we... Xavier... he... how could my brother betray all of us? How can he hurt us like that? He's supposed to protect us at all costs but... Let me continue to eavesdrop.

...

[Martin]

I hear what Khumo is saying but it's not easy at all. Yes, Xavier betrayed us but he's still my son. How can I... my goodness. Why is this happening to me?

...

Me: I...

Khumo: What's there to think about?

Me: It's not easy.

Khumo: May I please disrespect you right now? I apologize in advance.

Me: Sure. Go ahead.

Khumo: You are stupid, Martin Modise.

Me: How?

Khumo: Everything is your fault from the beginning. You shouldn't have taken him in.

...

Does she know the truth about Xavier? Does she know his true identity? But... how? I never said anything about Xavier's identity to anyone.

...

Me: Do you know something?

Khumo: Is there something I don't know? Let me remind you that I had to start being extremely smart from the age of 8. I always find and know the truth when I look for it.

Me: When did you find out?

Khumo: Today.

Me: But how? You went to the hospital. When did you get the time to find the truth?

Khumo: Uncle, does that really matter right now?

Me: I...

Khumo: You will have to choose. Will it be your so called son, Xavier Modise or your loving brother, Hector Modise?

Me: I need to clear my head. Please don't say things like that.

Khumo: I mean... should I just sit around and wait for Xavier to kill all of us?

Me: That's not what I'm saying.

Khumo: Then what are you really saying?

Me: I... I don't know.



Khumo: I will give you 5 days to think about everything but if Xavier does something evil within the given 5 days, I will make sure that I retaliate and I promise you that I won't have any mercy on him.

...

She didn't wait for me to say anything. She immediately left.

...

[Thato]

I ran away when I heard Khumo's footsteps approaching the door but she caught up to me.

...

Khumo: No one can ever eavesdrop on me without my permission. I know that you followed me to your father's study and eavesdropped. I let you eavesdrop so yes, you had my permission.

Me: (Smiles) Wow, you are so cool even when you are angry.

Khumo: How do you feel?

Me: Huh?

Khumo: Thato, I know that you heard everything so tell me how you feel.

Me: I am shattered. I feel so sorry for everyone.

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Khumo: Should I kill your brother?

Me: It's up to you.

Khumo: Heyyy, are you giving up on your brother?

Me: I'd give up on any evil family member for you.

Khumo: What a fool.

Me: I will choose you over and over again. I trust you with my everything.

Khumo: Do you?

Me: Yes. Well, I don't know what you found out about Xavier but I know that you are very smart. I trust you.

Khumo: You are boring. You are not giving me any drama.

...

She attempted to leave but I stood before her.

...

Me: Please wait.

Khumo: What is it?

Me: Where are you going?

Khumo: Home. Where else?

Me: What if Xavier...

Khumo: Don't worry. Xavier won't kill me yet.

Me: May I please ask you something?

Khumo: Go ahead.

Me: What did you find out about Xavier?

Khumo: It's not your business.

Me: But you said that you allowed me to eavesdrop so it means that you wanted me to know the truth. Why can't you just tell me everything?

Khumo: I won't.

Me: Why not?

Khumo: I am not in the mood.

...

She pushed me aside and left. What has happened to Aiden has taken Khumo back to being extremely cold. Khumo was always cold and mean but got better and even started smiling when she fell in love with Aiden and reunited with her family but now I just saw that very same Khumo I knew years ago. I feel so sad. I really want Khumo to be happy even if it means killing Xavier myself.

...

[3 Days Later]

[Mr T]

What has happened to Khumo? We all know that she loves Aiden and she's saddened by the condition Aiden is in but she has become colder than ever before. She managed to get rid of all the people who were supporting Dean Jones and even exposed others and got the media involved. Not only did she expose the people who were supporting The Jones for their shady dealings but she also exposed The Jones and she did it alone.

...

The Jones are now hated by the entire world for the bad things they did. Khumo also leaked a video of what happened to our family and other families years ago but deleted the rape part. Yes, The Jones wronged so many family members. I thought that The Jones wronged my family and

other few families I know but I was wrong. The Jones wronged way too many families and even families abroad. The entire world hates The Jones. Mr and Mrs Jones were arrested immediately after Mr Jones got discharged from the hospital.

...

How was Khumo able to find true cops that are not supporting The Jones? I really don't know. I heard that Khumo is also planning something that will leave The Jones completely shattered but what is it? I also don't know.

...

Of course The Jones must pay but I also don't want My Little Diamond to get deeper and deeper in this revenge thing. Don't get me wrong, I am proud of her and I love the fact that she didn't get The Jones blood on her hands and allowed the law to deal with them but I am also worried because clearly she is no longer working with us so I don't know if this is her original plan or not and if I remember well, her original plan included her own death. So I don't know if she will really allow the law to deal with The Jones or if there's more to her plan. Actually trying to think about her plan makes me more confused. I wonder if Aiden knows something about Khumo's plan. But... Aiden is still not awake. Thato is also in the dark. Who would know?? No one!!

...

[Xavier]

I'm fuming because once again Khumo outsmarted me. I knew everything, didn't I? So what's this new plan? And why is Khumo not involving anyone? What am I missing here? I thought that I knew everything and this is not how Khumo and everyone else was going to teach The Jones a lesson. Nobody seems to know what Khumo's next step is and that bothers me a lot. I was supposed to have her and everyone else wrapped around my little finger so what is this?

...

I was really fuming and felt like I was losing. I can't lose. I must teach The Modises and The Smiths a lesson.

...

My mom walked in and immediately slapped me. I saw stars. My head was spinning.

## Chapter 47

[Xavier]

I can't believe that my mom, Nandi slapped me. Did she have to do that at a time like this? She's so annoying.

...

Me: Okay, what was that about? Why did you slap me?

Nandi: I HAD TOLD YOU TO EXPOSE THAT GIRL BEFORE IT'S TOO LATE. LOOK WHAT SHE DID NOW. DIDN'T YOU SAY THAT YOU KNEW EVERYTHING ABOUT HER PLAN?

Me: I...

Nandi: I WILL NEVER FORGIVE YOU IF ANYTHING HAPPENS TO MY HUSBAND. TRUST ME ON THIS ONE!!

Me: Geez, would you stop yelling? You are getting on my nerves right now.

...

She attempted to slap me again but my brothers, Alfonso and David walked in and distracted her.

...

Alfonso: It's not the time to fight right now. We need to do something about Khumo and her loved ones.

Me: Hold on, did you tell them? Mom???? Why???? I trusted you!!

...

She just stared at me. She had teary eyes so I felt very bad.

...

Me: Look. I'm sorry. I didn't know that things would turn out like this.

David: You actually gambled with our father's life. You knew who took our father but still kept quiet even after he lost a finger. How can you keep something like that from us, Xavier?

Me: Look. I didn't think that...

Alfonso: The problem is you never think. Everything is your fault, Xavier.

...

I kept quiet because I felt guilty. Everyone was absolutely right. I am the cause of everything and now I don't know what to do. I don't know what Khumo will do next so I'm very lost.

...

[Khumo]

I have discovered so many things in the last days and I must say that now Xavier's entire family is siding with Xavier. Well, I won't stop what I have started until I win. I don't want to work with anyone anymore unless that person is Aiden.

...

These people wasted my time. We had planned everything with Xavier and didn't know that he is a snake so now that I know everything and I know how slow everyone is, I decided to go with my original plan but I won't end up dying with The Jones. I made some few changes to my plan because this time I have a reason to live so I don't see why I should die with The Jones.

...

I have planned everything since I was extremely young so why should I rely on people that might end up getting all of us killed? I have been doing good without these slow people. They really get on my nerves because they can be very emotional.

...

I did what I did to The Jones to actually show uncle Martin that I can easily get rid of my enemies. I had given him 5 days to think about everything regarding Xavier so it's 3 days later now; I hope that he knows that I am not joking.

...

I may sound selfish but how can uncle be attached to someone like Xavier? How can uncle forget that I have been living with Xavier's brothers, sisters, and mother at The Jones? What could have happened to me if I didn't put 2 and 2 together fast? Nandi has been pretending to be so nice to me and by the look of it, she had known my true identity for quite some time now. Nandi and Xavier were the only ones who knew

everything about me and my loved ones but now Nandi told Alfonso, David, Sofia and Arabella about me and my loved ones so how can uncle Martin still care about Xavier when things are like this?

...

Xavier is the cause of everything because he's the one who exposed me and my loved ones to his mother, Nandi so now Nandi opened her big mouth and told all her children everything. How can I still spare Xavier and his family members? No. I won't!! Uncle better wake up.

...

Thato walked in my bedroom.

...

Thato: Hey.

Me: Hi.

...

She sat down next to me.

...

Thato: Khumo?

Me: Yes?

Thato: You've been living with your parents since yesterday. You didn't go back to The Jones house, won't you be suspected?

Me: Mr and Mrs Jones are locked up and are not allowed to be visited by anyone. They don't know anything about me yet.

Thato: I know but won't Xavier find a way to tell them about you?

Me: He won't. I made sure of that.

Thato: So what about Johnny's family? They live in The Jones' house and you were living with them.

Me: Well, Xavier told his mom about me and my loved ones and his mom ended up telling Alfonso and everyone else.

Thato: Are you serious? Is that why you came here?

Me: (Smiles) Do you want the truth?

Thato: Yes.

Me: I didn't just come here. I ran for my life.

Thato: (Laughs) Okay. Is that why you ran for your life?

Me: Yes. I had to. I heard when that woman told everyone about me so I had to sneak out and save my life.

Thato: You did well. I'm happy that you are okay.

Me: Now May and Kelsy also know about me because of that woman's big mouth.

Thato: I wonder what has happened to my mother. She was never a monster.

Me: Really? Was she nice at some point?

Thato: Yes. She was.

Me: Wow, that's surprising.

Thato: You are very brave.

Me: Huh?

Thato: I mean, everyone knows that you are the one who killed some of the people who were supporting The Jones and exposed others, including The Jones.

Me: It's not me.

Thato: It's you. We know.

...

I just kept quiet.

...

Thato: (Cries) Thank you.

Me: Huh? What's wrong?

Thato: The Jones are truly horrible. Johnny and Xavier are also horrible. They...

...

She stopped talking and just cried.

...

Me: What's wrong?

Thato: I... I always learn from you. You are my role model.

Me: Heyyy, I am a bad person so you should stop seeing me as your role model.

Thato: Once again, I have learned something from you. What you did to The Jones and their lapdogs gave me courage to speak up about what had happened years ago.

Me: Years ago? What are you talking about?

Thato: In front of him, I always pretended not to remember all the faces of the people who had buried me alive. I didn't want him to hurt me again that's why I had to pretend. I only acted like I remembered Johnny's face and the incident but not the other two people who were helping Johnny.

Me: Huh?? Faces?? Two more people?? Were... What are you saying? Were you buried by Johnny and two other people?

...

She nodded.

...

Me: Were you not only buried alive by Johnny?

Thato: No. Johnny was the first person but he had two helpers.

Me: Huh?? Are you serious??

Thato: Yes. I am serious.

Me: Does your father know?

Thato: No. Dad only knows about Johnny.

Me: THATOOOOOOO????!!!! How can you keep such a thing from your father?

Thato: I didn't want him to get hurt. And I also didn't want him to do anything out of anger and end up in jail or end up killed by Johnny and the others.

Me: You were young. What did you know about jail or death by then? You should've told your father everything.

...

She just cried. I hugged her and just let her cry.

...

Thato: I... Just like you, I knew a lot from a young age but I had to always act less smart after that incident because I wanted to be seen as someone who was not a threat. I wanted to just focus on being a good learner at school and passing my classes. So I turned into this bubbly person who didn't have worries at all. I had to act a little dumb in order to move on.

Me: Oh, my goodness, Thato. How... Wh... Why... Wow.

...

I took a deep breath.



...

Me: Who were the other two people who helped Johnny to bury you alive?

Thato: It was Xavier and mom.

Me: WHAAAAAAAAAT???????????

## Chapter 48

[Freya]

Did Thato just say that her own mother and brother buried her alive? I... I don't get it. Why would her own family members do that to her?

...

I heard everything not because I was eavesdropping but because I was bringing some snacks to Khumo and Thato but... who could have thought that I would hear such things?

...

Khumo: Mom, come in. I know that you are standing outside my bedroom.

...

Huh? How does Khumo know that I am here? I didn't even show myself so how?

...

Khumo: Mom????

...

I went in. I looked embarrassed because it looked like I was eavesdropping and I was really not eavesdropping.

...

Me: I... Sorry. Here are some snacks for the two of you.

...

I placed them on the study table.

...

Khumo: Thank you but I don't want any snacks right now.

Me: Okay.

Khumo: You heard everything. What do you think?

...

I looked at Thato who couldn't stop crying. I wanted to cheer her up so bad.

...

Me: They should... uhh... die??

Khumo: You don't sound sure.

Me: I just don't want to say anything that would hurt Thato.

Khumo: Her opinion does not matter. I will not spare her brother and mother even if she asks me to.

Me: No dear, you can't be like that. Thato should be the one to decide what she wants us to do.

Khumo: What if she gets soft?

Me: We should still listen to her.

Khumo: Unfortunately I don't listen to anyone who doesn't side with me.

Me: But dear...

Khumo: Mom, stop it.

Me: I just don't want us to hurt Thato.

Khumo: Keeping those horrible people alive will only hurt Thato. Thato lived her life in fear. She acted like she only remembered Johnny as the person who wronged her. She never mentioned Xavier and her mom.

That's not cool.

Me: I know and I don't support what they did but I don't want us to decide everything for Thato. What if she doesn't want her mother and brother to die?

Khumo: Then I will have to kill her mother, brother and kill her after them. She won't have to...

Me: KHUMO????!!!!

Khumo: (Yells) XAVIER IS NOT UNCLE MARTIN'S SON. HE IS JOHNNY'S SON!!!!

Me: WHAAAATTT????

...

Thato wiped off her tears and looked at Khumo.

...

Thato: Wha... Khumo took a deep breath and nodded.

...

Thato: I... I don't understand. Does he know?

Khumo: Who?

Thato: Dad.

Khumo: Uhh...

Thato: Please tell me the truth.

...

Khumo nodded again. I was so shocked. I didn't know this one at all.

Does my husband, Hector also know this? I'm shook.

...

Thato: I don't understand. How can dad take Johnny's son in? Didn't he think before taking Johnny's son in? Did he really take Johnny's son in even after what he knew Johnny did to me?

Me: Dear, your father will give you an explanation. Please don't overthink.

Thato: What if dad also wants to bury me alive? What if he doesn't love me and...

Khumo: No, No, No. Thato, please don't say such things. Your dad loves you and he can never do such things to you.

Thato: If my mom and so called brother can do it, why can't dad also do it?

Me: No, my baby. Please don't say such things. Your dad...

Thato: They did me wrong. They shouldn't have treated me so bad.

Khumo: Thato, please don't worry about anything. I will make them pay.

Thato: And what about my dad? I trusted him so much.

Khumo: Let's hear him first. I trust him. I know that he's a good man.

Thato: But I don't trust him anymore after what I heard. How can I trust him?

Khumo: What about me? You trust me, right?

...

Thato nodded.

...

Khumo: Continue to trust me. I will never let you down and you know that.

...

Tears streamed down Thato's face as she spoke.

...

Thato: Yes. I trust you so much.

Khumo: Then trust me, your dad is not a bad man. Something is... something is fishy and I am not able to understand anything at the moment.

Me: Fishy? Why do you say that?

Khumo: How old is Uncle Martin's children with Nandi and how old is Johnny's children with Nandi? Some of them are the same age so if Nandi was the one who was pregnant how... wow.

Thato: Khumo, who's Nandi?

Me: Thato? Isn't Nandi your mom?

Thato: Uhh, no. Nandi is my mom's twin sister.

Me & Khumo: WHAAAAATTTTTT????

Thato: Yes but Nandi passed away a week before I was buried alive.

Khumo: Amen!! Confuse me more.

...

Are you serious, Khumo?

[Khumo]

Jesus Christ, what is Thato saying? She also confused me.

...

Thato: How are you confused, Khumo?

Me: (As I scratch my head) Thato, what did you just say?

...

She got up and wiped away her tears.

...

Thato: Aunt Freya, are you also lost?

Freya: Very lost. I'm even getting a headache right now.

Thato: Did you also think that my mom is Nandi?

Freya: Is she not? Your father can't be mistaken, right?

Thato: Did he also say that my mom is Nandi?

Freya: I mean, he didn't have to say it; everyone knows that the woman who is now married to Johnny is your mom.

Me: And Thato also said it to me herself. So what's going on?

Thato: Yes. The woman married to Johnny is my mom.

...

I was losing it. Hold on, am I getting slow?

...

Me: Thato, you are getting on my nerves. Can you please be serious?

Thato: But I'm serious.

Freya: Hold on. Thato, have you not met the woman who got married to Johnny?

Thato: I have. She buried me alive with...

Me: So why did you say that she passed away a week before you got buried alive?

Thato: Did I say that?

Me: THATO!!!!!!

Thato: Khumo, I said that Nandi passed away not my mom.

Me: Thato, the woman who is married to Johnny is alive.

Thato: Yes, my mom is alive and she is not Nandi.

Me: Hold on, who's your mom if it's not Nandi? What's your mom's name?

Thato: Nandipha.

Me: Isn't that the same thing?

Freya: Yes. Nandipha for short is Nandi.

Thato: Oh, now I understand why you are all confused. Okay, here's a thing. My mom's name is Nandipha and my mom's twin sister is Nandi.

Me: Oh, two people? Are you talking about two people?

Thato: Yes. It's just like you, Khumo. Your name is Khumo and that's it. Your name is not Khumoetsile, or is your name Khumoetsile?

...

Oh, now I get it. There is Nandi and there's also Nandipha. She has a point. How did I miss that? I've heard Uncle Martin referring to Thato's mom as Nandipha so I thought that Nandipha and Nandi were the same person. Wow, they got me.

...

Thato: Khumo??

Me: Oh, I completely misunderstood everything. My bad.

Freya: So Thato, is your mom not Nandi?

Thato: Yes but Nandipha for short is Nandi so I understand why everyone mixed the two.

Me: Oh, my goodness. This is bad.

Thato: What is bad?

Me: Does your dad know that your mom has a twin sister?

Thato: Had. The twin sister passed away. And yes, dad knows. All my siblings are aware of that fact.

Me: Didn't anyone ever think that Nandi might have stolen your mom's identity?

Thato: But Nandi passed away. How can she steal my mom's identity?

Freya: Wake up, Thato. Khumo has a point. Didn't you say that your mom was never a monster?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Thato??

Thato: Yeah, I said that.

Me: Uhh... Nandi and Nandipha are obviously identical twins, right?

Thato: Yes, identical.

Freya: When did your mom start changing?

Thato: Uhh... immediately after the funeral.

Me: Funeral?

Thato: Yes, Nandi's funeral.

Me: There!! The truth is right in front of you. The woman who buried you alive is indeed Nandi and not Nandipha. The woman who buried you alive is not your mom at all.

Thato: Huh?? But how??

Me: Your father and all The Modises are sleeping, that's how!!

Thato: Oh...

Me: It makes sense. How can you all fail to read in between the lines?

Nandi is horrible to you because she's not your mother.

Freya: I am with Khumo on this one. Nandi is not your mom.

Thato: Yes, she's not my mom. I've been saying that. My mom is Nandipha.

Me: Don't you still get it, Thato? Xavier's mother is living as Nandi and not as Nandipha.

Thato: Really? I didn't know that.

Me: How can you not know? Have I never mentioned Nandi to you? We always talk about your mom.

Thato: Uhh, you have never mentioned the name Nandi. You always referred to her as "your mother".

...

Did I really never mention the name Nandi to Thato? Why do I feel like I have? Did... wow.

...

Freya: The truth is right in front of us. Nandi is pretending to be Nandipha. Nandi never died. She is alive and stole your mom's life.

Thato: Then who died? If Nandi is really alive then who died? And where's the real Nandipha if she's not the one married to Johnny?

Me: That's what we should find out. Things will get out of hand if we don't do something. I need to capture Xavier before end of tonight. We need to know where the real Nandipha is. The woman who buried you alive is not uncle Martin's ex wife; your mom is not Johnny's children's mom. Johnny's children's mother is indeed Nandi. How can your father not get that? Johnny's other daughter, Sofia is the same age as me and you, Thato. David is the same age as your other brother. How?? You and Sofia are not twins so how are you the same age?

Thato: Oh, you have a point.

Me: Exactly so now I'm going crazy because clearly those horrible people know everything about your real mother and we are in the dark.

...

"I know everything. That fool confessed everything to me before shooting me.", said Aiden walking through the door. Trust my stupid heart to make me jump on someone who is clearly still hurt. I hugged him so tight and forgot that I was actually hurting him.

...

I was extremely happy. I looked like someone who was drunk in love. My... My Aiden made it. MY AIDEN IS AWAKE, WORLD.

...

Tears streamed down my face. I couldn't stop myself from crying. My goodness, should I just ask this man to marry me right now and right here?

## Chapter 49

[Aiden]

Wow, Khumo looks really happy to see me. I'm... I'm very happy but wow, does she want to kill me right now? She's hurting me like crazy but I'll just act like I'm not getting hurt; I mean, I also enjoy this hug so much.

...

I guess that Khumo is no longer mad at me. She never forgave me for almost getting her entire family members killed on that day but it now looks like she's completely fine.

...

Aunt Freya cleared her throat. Talk about ruining this lovely moment.

...

Freya: Khumo, you are hurting him. Get off him.

Khumo: (Sniffs) Sorry. I'm really sorry.

Me: No. I'm absolutely okay. You didn't hurt me.

...

She broke off the hug and looked at me.

...

Khumo: How are you?

Me: (As I wipe away her tears) I am happy. (Smiles) It's good to see you.

Khumo: You smell like medicine. Go take a bath and brush your teeth.

Me: Hold on, who has been doing that for me? Who cleaned me up when I was in my deathbed and...

Khumo: Do you have to say your deathbed? You are so annoying.

Me: (Smiles) Sorry, my wife.



...

I looked at Thato. She was bothered by something. She was with us but not with us, if that makes sense.

...

Me: Khumo, what's with Thato?

Khumo: How can you be normal after hearing that someone else is pretending to be your mom? You heard everything, right?

...

I nodded.

...

Freya: Aiden, please sit down. You are still not okay. Stop staring at Khumo like she's your wife. No one will marry her without my permission. You are no exception.

Khumo: (Laughs) Moooooommmmm!!!!

...

I laughed.

...

Thato: Aiden, are you okay?

Me: Oh, you are finally back. (Smiles) Mhmm. I'm fine.

...

She shocked me when she knelt down before me.

...

Khumo: Thato??

Freya: What ... what are you doing, Thato?

Thato: Aiden, I'm really sorry. You were shot by my brother, Xavier, right? Please forgive me.

Me: Why are you apologizing to me? That fool is not your brother at all. He confessed so many things to me. Get up, please.

Thato: I feel so bad.

Me: You and I are very close. You are like my sister. We all didn't know what Xavier was up to so don't blame yourself for anything. Please get up.

...

She got up.

...

Thato: Are you okay?

Me: Yes, I am doing better. I'm alive, that's all that matters.

Thato: Are you in pain?

Me: No. I'm fine.

Freya: Aiden, what really happened?

Me: May I first take a bath? Someone told me that I smell like medicine.

Freya: (Laughs) Okay. Go ahead and take a bath. Actually I will get things ready for you.

Khumo: No, mom. I will get things ready for Aiden. He can use my bathroom.

Freya: Are you sure?

Khumo: Yes, mom.

...

Khumo held my hand and led me to the bathroom.

...

What? What happened to Khumo? She was never this affectionate toward me. (Giggles) But... I really love this a lot.

...

Khumo: What's funny?

Me: (Smiles) Nothing. I'm just happy.

Khumo: I see.

...

She got everything ready for me.

...

Khumo: Should I help you undress?

Me: (Smiles) Do you want to see my nakedness?

Khumo: You are a fool.

Me: (Giggles) Just be honest. You want to see Aiden Junior.

Khumo: You are such a douchebag.

Me: (Laughs) I know.

...

She shocked me when she cried and held on to me. She hugged me, placing her head on my chest since I'm very tall.

...

Me: Is everything okay?

Khumo: You scared me so much.

Me: Do you ever get scared?

Khumo: Aiden, please be serious.

Me: I'm sorry. Well, I didn't mean to scare you at all. Xavier fooled me. It was easy to be fooled by him because he was one of us.

Khumo: I will kill him.

Me: And I will do the cleaning up.

...

She broke off the hug and looked at me.

...

Khumo: Really?

Me: Yes.

Khumo: Why is Martin so attached to Xavier?

Me: We need to all sit down and talk about this.

Khumo: Xavier believes that you are dead.

Me: That's good.

Khumo: He also lied about being out of the country.

Me: I see. He wants to plan better away from us.

Khumo: I've made sure that your siblings and Thato's siblings return to the country. They will land tomorrow morning and I will strike again after that.

Me: Strike again? What am I missing here? Did you do something when I was unconscious?

Khumo: Will you be able to bath on your own?

Me: Yes, why?

Khumo: I will tell you everything when you are done bathing.

Me: Okay.

...

She kissed my cheek and left the bathroom.

...

Wow, I love this new Khumo. She's so affectionate and I am here for it.

...

I was about to take a bath when I realized that Khumo prepared everything that I use. Wow, how does she know my toiletries? And clothes? How does she know my style and size? She... (Laughs) she also got the perfect underwear for me. What am I missing here? How does she know so much about me? How does she know the things I never told her about?

...

I got emotional. I was really in cloud nine. Khumo really loves me and she doesn't have to say it for me to know; I can see and feel it.

...

[Khumo]

I was in the kitchen when daddy arrived home. He looked worried.

...

Me: Daddy, what's wrong?

Mr T: Huh? Oh, hi, baby.

Me: Did you not see me?

...

Mom walked in.

...

Freya: Hector, what's wrong? Did you also get the news?

Me: Mom, what news?

Mr T: Dean Jones escaped from prison.

Freya: And he's going after the person who ruined everything for him.

Me: (Smiles) So why are the two of you worried?

Mr T: Nandi will definitely tell him everything about you.

Me: (Smiles) Relax. Everything is under my control.

Mr T: What do you mean?

Me: Would I just let Nandi get her way? Don't worry. I planned Mr Jones downfall.

Freya: Huh. What do you mean?

Me: Mr Jones did not just escape. He fell into my trap. So, I should go and get ready.

## Chapter 50

[Khumo]

My parents wanted to help me but I refused. I don't want to involve them at the moment because they will waste my time. They can show themselves to Mr Jones very soon but it can't be today.

...

Aiden was taking forever in the bathroom so I left. Well, I wasn't planning to take him with me. He's still not okay so I don't want to put him in danger at all.

...

I received a call from Aiden's mom, Kate Smith.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, is everything okay?

Kate: Change of plans. Don't capture Dean Jones tonight.

Me: Why not?

Kate: Oliver's burial is tomorrow morning and the cops will be there so you might get in danger if Dean Jones is nowhere to be seen.

Me: I don't understand. Why did they change the funeral arrangements? The funeral is...

...

I realized that I was being followed by Aiden's car.

...

Kate: Is everything okay? Why did you stop talking?

Me: He's following me.

Kate: Dean Jones?

Me: No. Your stupid son.

Kate: Liam? Why is...

Me: Aiden, not Liam.

Kate: Ai... Aiden?

Me: Mhmm.

Kate: Is he finally awake?

Me: Yes. He woke up today.

Kate: (Cries) Why didn't you tell me sooner? I was really worried about him.

Me: Everything happened so fast. I'm sorry.

Kate: How is he? I want to see him.

Me: For how long are you going to pretend like you don't know what your family does? You have not been able to see your unwell son because you are pretending to be in the dark about everything.

Kate: The thing is I am mad at my husband. How can he turn all my family members into gangsters? Couldn't he leave the children out of this? Actually I'm mad at all my family members.

Me: I am coming to your house. Stop crying. I'll make some changes to the plan. Aiden won't stop following me. He's very determined so I'm worried about him. I just have to come to your house.

Kate: Okay. No problem. I'll wait for the two of you.

Me: You better stop pretending like someone who know nothing about her family. You are only hurting yourself. Your husband and children are not aware of the fact that you know everything so they are all okay.

Kate: We'll talk when you get to my house.

Me: Okay.

...

I hung up and drove straight to Aiden's mom's house.

...

Kate: (Smiles) It's nice to see you.

Me: (Smiles) Likewise.

...

We shared a hug and Aiden immediately walked in.

...

Me: You shouldn't be driving. You are still not okay.

Aiden: I wasn't the one driving. Your father was driving.

Me: What? How can he let you follow me and even become your driver? Where is he now?

Aiden: He drove back to his house.

Me: Why were you following me?

Aiden: You left me without saying anything.

Me: You were still in the bathroom. I didn't want to disturb you.

...

Aiden looked at his mom and smiled.

...

Aiden: Have you been crying?

...

Kate kept quiet and acted like she didn't see Aiden.

...

Aiden: What's wrong with her? Isn't she happy to see me?

Me: Aiden, your mom knows everything.

Kate: Wow, you don't even beat around the bush. Next time warn me.

Me: I just hate it when things are moving too slow. Should I just let you suffer alone?

Aiden: What's going on? What are the two of you talking about?

Me: Your mom knows that your entire family...

Kate: Khumo????

Me: Gangsters, gangsters. She knows. Your mom knows everything.

...

Aiden kept quiet. He probably wished that he was able to teleport so that he can do it right away to avoid his mom.

...

Kate: Yes, Aiden. I know everything.

Me: Tell him how you know.

Kate: Khumo told me everything.

...

Aiden looked at me. He looked angry but didn't want to act.

...

Me: What? I had to tell her. She didn't hear from you for so long and was longing to hear from you or see you but no one told her anything about you. Is that fair? Should a mother really go through that? Huh?

Aiden: Uhm... no.

Me: So don't blame me for telling her the truth. Well, I also had to tell her the truth because Nandi was targeting her. Nandi had befriended your mom but it's for obvious reasons, is it not? I had to tell your mom the entire truth in order for her to stay away from Nandi.

Aiden: Did Nandi really befriend her?

Me: Yes, and her plan was to end up taking your mom and threatening everyone with her life. She was going to ask for Johnny or else she kills your mom.

Aiden: Wow, did... what really happened when I was unconscious?

Me: Let's sit down.

...

I got him a glass of water and sat down next to him. I began telling him everything that happened when he was unconscious.

...

Aiden: Hold on, are you telling me that you included my mom in your plan to take down The Jones but you refused to involve everyone else?

Me: That's where you are wrong. Your mom included herself. Isn't she stubborn just like you? Well, don't worry. I got everything done by myself, your mom is just like someone who helps me when I want to vent. I tell her everything not because I want to get her hands dirty, I just love talking to her a lot. She has been in my life since the day I "lost" my family members right in front of my eyes.

Aiden: Oh, I see. So why is she mad at me and not mad at you?

Me: Who said that she's mad at you?

Aiden: She's my mom. I know her. She's mad at me and my family members but she's not mad at you. You are the most ruthless so why is she not mad at you?

Me: (Smiles) I'm special.

Aiden: Double standards. She didn't even hug me or greet me.

Me: Give her some time. She'll be fine.

Aiden: But why...

Me: Aiden, please.

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Should I just let Nandi expose me to Mr Jones?

Aiden & Kate: WHAT????

Me: Well, if I don't capture Mr Jones tonight then my plan will be ruined. Mr Jones will obviously know about me from the others.



Kate: You are the reason why Dean escaped from prison so you can also be the reason why he goes back.

Aiden: What did Khumo do? Did you say that Mr Jones already escaped from prison?

Me: Yeah, he escaped but it's what I wanted. I was planning to capture him with Xavier tonight but now I have to change my plan because Oliver's burial is tomorrow and obviously Mr Jones has to be there. If I harm The Jones and anyone related to him tonight, when the burial is just tomorrow, the cops will definitely look into it and I don't want the cops coming after me.

Aiden: Mhmm, I see. Well, we should quickly find a way to deal with everything.

...

"There's no need. Dean Jones is back in prison."; said uncle Martin, walking in with my daddy and Aiden's dad.

...

Me: What's going on? How is he back there?

Martin: The three of us made sure that he goes back.

Me: You, daddy and Aiden's dad?

Martin: Yes.

Me: Oh, I see. Thank you so much.

Martin: I'm truly sorry. I didn't know that Xavier was a monster. Your father told me everything that Thato told you. I'm truly sorry. I also didn't know that Xavier is Johnny's son.

Me: WHAT???? How can you not know?

Martin: I knew that Xavier was not my son but I thought that he was my ex wife's sister's son. The sister passed away so when my ex wife gave Xavier to me two years after Xavier's mother passed away, she told me that she can't take care of him, I just took Xavier in. My ex wife gave Xavier to me when Thato was 8 years old. I just told all my children that Xavier is their elder brother who was living abroad for many years so my children grew up knowing that Xavier was their older brother.

...

I'm a little dizzy, that's how confused I am. I hope that I catch up with the explanation very soon.

...

Me: When was Thato buried alive?

Martin: She was 6 years old when she was buried alive.

...

Oh, now I get it. Thato was buried alive when she was 6 years old and that's a week or two weeks before the other twin sister "passed" away. That's when Nandi stole Thato's mother's identity and became cruel to her "children" with Martin. When Thato was 8 years old, Xavier suddenly became Martin's children's elder brother. Mhmm, well planned.

...

Me: Wow, it was really planned. Just when Thato was 8 years old, Xavier was sent to you by his own mother to keep an eye on you and Thato.

Martin: I don't follow.

Me: The person who lives with Johnny is not your wife. She's Xavier's real mother. She's not your ex wife.

Aiden: The person who "passed" away when Thato was 6 years old, was Thato's real mother and your wife. The woman who lives with Johnny stole your wife's identity. Thato's so called mom started changing when Thato was 6 years old, couldn't you see it? That's when Thato's real mom was abducted. When Thato was 8, Xavier was sent to you and you took him in because you are too nice but the truth is Xavier's mom is the woman who is married to Johnny. And...

...

We suddenly heard gunshots and before we could act. We were surrounded by so many armed men. Xavier and his mom, Nandi were among them.

...

Hold on, didn't uncle Martin tell Aiden's father to change the gate code? Xavier obviously let himself and these people in. Was I outsmarted by Xavier? Sh\*t!!!!

## Chapter 51

[Xavier]

These foolish people did not see me coming. They trusted me so much. Thanks to my brothers, we decided to act today because no one would think that we'd act just before Oliver's burial.

...

Me: (Laughs) Hey, family. Happy to see me?

Khumo: Xavier, what's going on?

...

My mom went to Khumo and slapped her.

...

Nandi: What do you think is going on? Aren't you smarter than everyone?

Me: Mom, who said that you can slap her before me? I must...

...

I saw Aiden and I was shocked.

...

Me: Is Aiden alive?

Khumo: That's not Aiden.

Me: (Laughs) Do you think that I'm a fool? All of you must keep your hands up. I don't trust you now that I see that Aiden is alive. You all lied to me.

Nandi: It's obvious that they were suspecting you.

Me: Aiden must have told them everything.

Nandi: Who cares? They are all dying before end of tonight.

...

Khumo started laughing and got on my nerves. I attempted to slap her but Martin caught my hand.

...

Me: Martin, let me go.

Martin: How can you turn out this way even after everything I did for you?

Me: Did I ask you to be stupid and do everything for me?

Aiden: Everyone was nice to you. Why do you hate us so much?

Me: Why shouldn't I hate you?

...

Martin pushed me away. I pointed a gun at him.

...

Me: Do you think that I wouldn't hurt you?

Khumo: With which balls?

Me: Excuse me?

Khumo: Xavier, you don't have the balls. Do you actually think that you can kill all of us here?

Me: (Laughs) What can you do? You are not armed at all.

Khumo: So?

Me: Look around you. You are surrounded by my men.

Khumo: (Laughs) Fine. Do your best. Make sure that you kill us because if you don't. I will definitely kill you and all your dogs.

...

I felt a chill running down my spine. What was that feeling all about?

...

Nandi: Khumo, you will really die. Do you think that we are joking?

Khumo: You will never find Johnny and Daniel. Oh, you will also never find Sofia, Arabella, Alfonso, David, Kelsy and May.

...

I froze. What does she mean? Does she really have Sofia and the others?

...

Nandi: (Laughs) The people you just mentioned are at home excluding Johnny and Daniel. Do you think that I will fall for your lies? Just shut up.

Khumo: Are you sure that they are at home?

Nandi: What is that supposed to mean? Of course they are at home. We all left them at home.

Khumo: (Laughs) Okay, if you say so.

Me: Khumo, what's going on? What is really going on?

Khumo: I admit that I was outsmarted this time. (Laughs) but I cannot be outsmarted for too long. Well, that's all I will tell you.

...

For some reason I was now getting scared. What is really going on? Did Khumo really take Sofia and the others? Did it happen just after we

came here? But how did she do it? I don't understand. I mean, she just admitted that she was outsmarted. So, how did she do it? What is really going on? I am really really really getting scared now.

...

Khumo: (Laughs) look at you, shaking in your boots. You look so stupid right now. It is so funny. I cannot stop laughing.

Nandi: Khumo, stop it. You are really getting on my nerves right now. Just stop laughing already.

Khumo: What are you waiting for? Just shoot us already. Is it not what you want?

Nandi: I will really shoot. I will really shoot. Don't get on my nerves, okay?

Khumo: well, all the best. Let me tell you something. The moment you kill us, is the moment all your loved ones will also die. Oh, not only your loved ones, Nandi; the loved ones of this men surrounding us will also die and trust me. I am not joking. Xavier, you know me, I don't joke like this. Fine, I know that I was outsmarted, but like I said, I cannot be outsmarted for too long. I always plan things ahead. I know that I was outsmarted but...

...

She kept quiet.

...

I looked at my mom and she also looked worried. She called me to the side and we whispered.

...

Nandi: She is really not scared so I believe her.

Me: Me too. Something is definitely wrong.

Nandi: What do we do?

Me: Let's try to call Alfonso. Maybe Khumo is just lying to us. We were with our loved ones before coming here so how can we believe Khumo's lies?

Nandi: The thing is she's not scared at all so she obviously trusts her plan. I'm getting worried.

Me: I'll call Alfonso right away.

Nandi: Okay. Do it. I'll try to call others.

...

I tried to call Alfonso and failed to reach him. I looked at my mom and shook my head.

...

Nandi: I can't reach everyone we left at home.

Me: I guess Khumo really has them.

Nandi: What do we do now?

Me: Let's just act like we are all okay. I will try to find a way to get us out of here.

Nandi: Okay, no problem.

...

We went back to everyone. I looked at Khumo and she was just quiet.

...

Me: What is it Khumo?

Khumo: We should all die together, don't you think?

Me: What do you mean?

...

A video suddenly started playing and it was a video of dad. My mom lost it when she saw the condition dad was in.

...

[Khumo]

My mom and Thato are truly smart; they came through. I was truly outsmarted by Xavier and his dogs. I didn't see him coming today so I had to buy time by acting like I was not scared at all. Truth be told, I have been laughing and acting all tough but I'm really scared. I'm not scared for myself, I'm actually scared for my loved ones. My daddy, my uncle, Aiden and both his parents are here so how can I not be scared?

...

I pretended not to be scared because I was just buying time. Xavier wanted our hands to be up, but because he was too focused on me, he didn't realize that my hands were not up the entire time. I managed to use my watch this entire time without making it obvious. Remember that my watch is connected to the access card, the secret room and also to my phone? So I used my watch to hack into the secret room and tampered

with the network signal back at The Jones so that Xavier and Nandi may fail to reach their loved ones who are back at The Jones when they try to call them.

...

I was also able to hack into my mom's phone and made sure that I don't hide that it's me. My mom is very smart, so I had to hack into her phone so that she may look into it and immediately know that something is up. And thank God, she immediately acted so I connected her to everything that was happening in Mr Smith's house.

...

Now that the video of Johnny is playing, I can tell that Thato went to where Johnny was kept and recorded the video of Johnny in a terrible condition. While my watch is still connected, she played the video for everyone to see. Now Xavier and Nandi are extremely scared and because they are distracted, Mr Smith signaled to us to move to a certain part in the house. There's a circle on the floor and it's obvious that Mr Smith moved us there for a reason.

...

Xavier pointed a gun at me.

...

Xavier: Khumo, I will kill you and...

...

And just like that, Mr Smith did something and we found ourselves falling into some room below the one we were initially in. Thank God, the room is bouncy so we didn't get hurt at all.

...

Me: What's this room about?

...

I immediately realized that only us who were standing inside the circled part of the room, fell into this other room. Xavier and his dogs were no longer with us.

...

Aiden: This is our secret room aka our hiding spot.

Kate: How come I didn't know about this room?

Aiden: Sorry, mom.

Martin: But we can't let Nandi and Xavier leave. They are up there alone.

Me: They have to leave. I'm sure that they ran for their lives by now. Didn't you see how scared they were? Well, we can't harm them before Oliver's burial. The cops will be at Oliver's burial tomorrow so we can't have them suspecting us.

Aiden: She has a point.

Martin: But my real wife... How will I ever know what happened to my real wife?

Aiden: Don't worry. I know where your wife is.

Martin: Is she alive?

Aiden: Yes, she's alive but I still don't know where she is. Xavier and Nandi also don't know where your wife is so we can look for her until we find her.

...

I'm so relieved. I'm so happy that Thato's real mom is somewhere out there but how was she able to stay alive and escape from Xavier and Nandi? Well, I will not leave any stone unturned to find them.

...

Thank God, mom and Thato were able to distract Xavier and his dogs without even being here. Now I'll give The Jones a heartbreaking gift tomorrow at Oliver's burial. I will definitely deal with Xavier and his mom after tomorrow.

## Chapter 52

[Sometime Later]

[Freya]

I am so proud of Thato, she did something that I never thought she would do. She finally faced Johnny on her own, and she was not scared at all.

...

She walked in and smiled at me. I gave her a big hug.

...



Me: (Smiles) You did great. I'm so proud of you. You did something that I never thought you were ready to do.

Thato: I was cool, was I not?

Me: Of course you were very cool. I like that.

Thato: Johnny was very very very shocked to see me, and he tried to actually make me feel weak, but I did not give in. I was so brave, all thanks to Khumo.

Me: You always had it in you. You give Khumo too much credit but it's okay. I understand.

...

She broke of the hug and looked at me.

...

Thato: No, I am not giving Khumo too much credit, for nothing. Khumo deserves it all. I have learned a lot from her.

Me: So tell me, how is Daniel doing? Did you see him?

Thato: No, I did not see Daniel. The thing is, I didn't want to waste time with unnecessary things, so I never went to see Daniel.

Me: Okay, I hear what you're saying. Well, you did very great and I'm proud of you.

...

She smiled and kissed my cheek.

...

Thato: Thank you. Thank you so much, aunt.

...

[Khumo]

We realized that Mr Smith wanted to talk to his wife so we were getting ready to leave but I really wanted to say something to Mr Smith so I asked to talk to him in his study.

...

Mr Smith: Is everything okay?

Me: Yes, sir. Everything is okay. I just wanted to say few things to you.

Mr Smith: What is it? What is going on?

Me: Please be understanding when she gets mad at you. She is really a nice person, but she feels betrayed. Please, be really nice to her. You have a good wife.

Mr Smith: (Smiles) Of course. I have heard a lot of things about you from her but she never knew that you and I have met. The two of you are really close and thank you so much for always being there for her.

Me: Well, I should say that it was the other way around. She was always there for me, and she never turned her back against me, not even once.

Mr Smith: Mhmm, she is a nice person, so I am really not surprised that she was always there for you.

Me: Mr. Smith, are you aware that you have shown us your secret room? Do you not have a problem with that at all?

Mr Smith: You all don't know how I opened the secret room except Aiden.

Me: It had something to do with the circle. I could figure it out if I want to.

Mr Smith: (Giggles) I know. Well, to be honest with you, I really don't have a problem, because I feel like I can trust all of you with my everything.

Me: I hear what you're saying, but please be careful. Don't go around showing your secret room to everyone you meet. I mean, look at what Xavier did to us.

Mr Smith: I hear you, and I really understand but I cannot be wrong about this. You are my friend's daughter; your uncle is also my friend; you get along with my wife and you also have a thing going on with Aiden, so what's there to not trust?

Me: (Smiles) Well, thank you very much for trusting me and everyone else. I promise you that we will never let you down.

Mr Smith: (Smiles) It's all good. I know that I chose the right people to be in my life and my family's life.

Me: Should I just marry your son? (Laughs) To be honest with you, I am very much interested in Aiden.

Mr Smith: (Laughs) I can tell that he's also very much interested in you. I feel like he changed a lot ever since he met you. Well, it's a good thing that he has changed a lot. I mean, that boy used to trouble us a lot.

Me: You mean that old man?

...

We both laughed.

...

[At Khumo's Parents House]

[Aiden]

Of course, I have followed Khumo to her parents' house. I mean, why would I go to my own parents' house or my own house? I want to be where I can see Khumo every single time. We don't have to sleep in the same bed or in the same room but what makes me happy is that I'll be where I can see her every time I want to see her.

...

[Xavier]

We arrived at The Jones and once again, realized how we got outsmarted by Khumo. She didn't do anything to our loved ones. Alfonso was very mad at us because he believes that there's noway Khumo could have fooled him like the way she fooled us. So now the atmosphere was bad in the house because we all had a huge argument.

...

May: I really have to kill Khumo myself. I have always hated that girl. I was right to just hate her.

Sofia: She really fooled all of us but I still feel bad for what happened to her at such a young age. Did her family members really have to go through...

May: SOFIA???? WHY ARE YOU ALWAYS SIDING WITH KHUMO?? SHE DESERVES WHAT HAPPENED TO HER AND HER FAMILY. I'M GOING TO KILL HER.

...

The screen suddenly turned on and someone started laughing. We were all shocked at how the screen turned itself on and... What????

Khumo???? Yes, that witch appeared on the screen.

...

Khumo: I see that the signal is now perfect. Are you all happy?

Me: How dare you fool us?

Khumo: What will you kill me with, May?

Me: Khumo, how did you...

Khumo: Xavier, I don't talk to cowards. Just shut up.

Me: How dare you call me a coward?

Khumo: (Smiles) Are you not a coward? Just shut up.

Alfonso: You have the nerve to video call us. Are you not scared of us?

Khumo: (Laughs) Scared of you? Are you joking right now?

Me: You should be scared of us.

...

Aiden suddenly appeared. He sat down next to Khumo.

...

Aiden: Xavier, who would be scared of someone like you? All you know is to betray the people close to you. No one is scared of you.

Me: Look who's talking. Did I not almost kill you?

Aiden: You tortured me while I was chained. You also shot me while I was chained. I didn't see you coming because you pretended to be my friend. Well, I will not show you any mercy and trust me on this one.

Khumo: We will come for you and it won't be nice.

Me: We are not scared of you.

Khumo: Mhmm. May and Kelsy, do you remember how you beat me up with your brothers years ago when I was still young? Well, I will never forget that day until I teach all of you a lesson.

Kelsy: Khumo, how can you still live in the past? My husband won't be happy with your behavior.

...

Khumo and Aiden laughed.

...

Khumo: Your husband? Where is he?

Kelsy: He's out of the country but he'll be back very soon.

Khumo: Are you sure?

Kelsy: Yes, I am sure.

Aiden: Your husband is never coming back to you. Xavier is truly a fool. He should know that your husband and May's boyfriend will never come back but he's in the dark. Oh, poor Xav.

...

Wait, what do they mean? Are they trying to frame me right now? What is this?

...

May: Xavier, did you kill my boyfriend and Kelsy's husband?

Me: No. I didn't. Believe me.

Nandi: May, they are just trying to frame Xavier. Don't believe them.

May: I hope you are right. If anything bad has happened to my boyfriend, I won't spare anyone.

...

Khumo and Aiden laughed even more. We all got angry and started yelling at them but they didn't seem to care.

...

Khumo: Sleep with one eye open. Let's get down to business tomorrow morning.

...

The screen turned off again. What kind of hacking does Khumo know? She's really good and I am still failing to find someone as good as her.

...

Wait, what did she mean when she said that we should sleep with one eye open and that we should get down to business tomorrow morning? What is that girl up to?

## Chapter 53

[Oliver's Burial Day]

[Khumo]

We were all seated at church as the pastor was preaching. It suddenly hit me that Oliver is truly dead. I looked at his casket then looked at his photo surrounded by funeral flowers.

...

The entire Jones family and Johnny's family were crying and I did not feel bad at all. I was actually feeling very happy. Death is not something to feel good about but I was happy to see all the Jones and Johnny's family crying. I was suddenly reminded of how my family members

were treated years ago. Oliver is better that he is getting buried the right way, but my family members were “killed” and thrown away like they were nothing; they were thrown into the river like they were nothing. Is that fair? No, it’s really not fair so I don’t feel bad right now. I’m actually very happy to see that these people are feeling what I felt at the age of 8.

...

Suddenly May started creating a scene at church as the pastor was preaching, calling me all sort of names, and telling everybody in the church that I was the one who killed Oliver but because Mr. and Mrs. Jones were still in the dark about the things that I have done they did not believe May at all, and they got really mad at her for saying all those things that she said to me.

...

Truly speaking, I wanted to laugh. I wanted to laugh at the fact that Mr. Mrs. Jones still believe me over everyone else. I really cannot wait for them to get hurt. It’s going to be very pleasing.

...

Because of May’s behavior towards me, she was taken outside to cool down. After getting done in the church, everyone went to the graveyard to say their last goodbyes to Oliver.

...

I knew that this was my time to do the worst. Yes, there are cops everywhere but I have planned this for a long time now so, nothing will go wrong, and I really trust myself.

...

As the casket was going down, I pretended to cry. I cried so much that my eyes were now red and hurting.

...

[Mr T]

I’m feeling very uneasy, because I don’t know what My Little Diamond is planning. Will she get caught? I don’t know. But... I... She won’t, right?? I really don’t know what she’s going to do.

...

I went to Aiden's bedroom and knocked on the door. He let me in and I sat down with him.

...

Me: Aiden, what is really going on?

Aiden: Are you worried about Khumo?

Me: Yes, of course I am worried. She is my daughter, and she has been through the worst.

Aiden: Don't worry about her. She's going to be fine. She will never get caught.

Me: And what makes you say that? Did she say something to you?

Aiden: Something like what?

Me: Did she tell you what exactly she is going to do today? I mean, why would she go to Oliver's burial?

Aiden: She does not want to be suspected by Mr. and Mrs. Jones yet.

Well, she also does not want to be suspected by the cops.

Me: I hear you, but what is she going to do?

Aiden: Do you really want to know?

Me: Of course, I want to know. Do you know something, Aiden?

...

He just smiled at me.

...

Me: I guess she told you everything. Well, I know that you really worry about her and I know that you love her a lot so the fact that you are not worried right now tells me that Khumo is going to be fine.

Aiden: Mhmm. She is really going to be fine. Just wait for the good news.

Me: Good news? What good news are you talking about?

Aiden: I see that you really want to know so, I will tell you what I know, but please don't ruin anything for Khumo.

Me: Okay, it's fine. Please tell me.

Aiden: Well, she is going to give Maya to The Jones.

Me: Huh?? Maya?? But... Maya is dead so, what are you really saying to me right now?

Aiden: That's all I can tell you right now. What Khumo will do today is a sign that The Jones are dying very soon.

Me: I don't understand.

Aiden: Oh, I just got a text from Khumo. I need to focus. May I please use the boardroom? We connected everything to the computer in the boardroom.

Me: Do whatever you want. What's the use? I am lost.

Aiden: Come with me. You'll understand everything very soon. Don't speak, just watch what I'll do. Khumo will be instructing me to do so many things at once so I need to focus.

Me: Did she allow you to work with her?

Aiden: Yes, I begged her until she gave in. She wanted to do everything by herself but it was going to be troublesome since she was going to have to do everything from the graveyard; her plan was a little risky with the cops around so I begged her to let me help her from home and she ended up agreeing.

Me: When did you beg her?

Aiden: Last night.

Me: Okay. That's good. Let's go to the boardroom now.

Aiden: (Smiles) Let's shatter The Jones to pieces before their death.

Me: (Smiles) Even if I am still lost, let's do it!!!!

[Khumo]

The time is finally here. Aiden better not be distracted by anything because I cannot even afford to miss a second.

...

Oliver was now buried. To be honest, not many people attended the burial. Only The Jones, Johnny's family members, the cops and the people who were organized by the cops attended the burial. The cops came with the pastor, some whack choir and people needed at the graveyard. What I'm trying to say is that, the burial was organized by the government and not The Jones. People wanted nothing to do with The Jones after I've exposed them to the entire world so The Jones lost friends, businesses, sponsors, you name them all. They didn't lose the house because it's not even in their name; that house belongs to The



Modises and trust me when I say that we will get it back after I've dealt with The Jones and Johnny's family members.

...

Well, the cops were now about to leave the graveyard with Mr and Mrs Jones but stopped when they saw a helicopter dropping down a casket with Maya's posters, photos and flyers falling down like rain. A very huge photo of Maya was attached to the casket and immediately I saw The Jones going weaker and weaker. Boy, was I not satisfied?? This is what I really wanted.

...

Me: Mom, is that... is that little May? Who would do something like that? And what's with the casket? Some people are so evil.

Sarah: (Cries) No, that's not little May.

Me: But that looks like her.

Sarah: That's Maya, May's twin sister.

Alfonso: Khumo, stop all of these. How evil can you be? We just buried Oliver. Can you give us a break?

Me: Me? Why are you saying those things to me? I...

...

I looked at Mr. Jones, and he looked like a walking corpse. No, he really looked like a zombie. The rest of them were crying like never before.

...

The casket finally landed on the ground, and I saw Mrs. Jones running to it, to open it. She screamed her lungs out, just after opening the casket.

...

Sarah: It's my daughter's bones.

...

Everyone took a look inside the casket but I acted like I was afraid to do it.

...

Maya is really dead.

...

It's just bones, why do they have to believe that they belong to Maya? Why is Mrs Jones so sure? Well, who cares? I did what I wanted to do and I am happy.

...

Sarah: She... who is after our family??

Xavier: It's Khumo. May kept telling you that Khumo is behind everything but you didn't believe her.

Sarah: Xavier, stop it. Please.

...

Mrs Jones was crying like someone who will explode and die.

...

Nandi: Khumo is really behind everything. I will...

...

Nandi pointed a gun at me but Mr Jones stood before me and protected me.

...

Mr Jones: I will kill you if you continue to say bad things about my daughter.

Kelsy: Dad, we...

Mr Jones: Shut up.

...

I sent another message to Aiden and he immediately acted. The helicopter started firing gunshots. Gunshots were now scaring the other people away and that's what I wanted.

...

The cops started shooting at the helicopter and nothing happened to the helicopter. The helicopter released more bullets and shot all Johnny's family members and The Jones... including me.

...

[Cop 1]

What on earth just happened here? The helicopter left immediately after shooting these people. What do we do?

...

Cop 2: These people are hated by the entire world. Let's just leave.

Me: Shouldn't we report this to the higher...

Cop 2: Do you want to be called incompetent?

Me: Let's just report this.

...

The other cops were now agreeing with me and all of a sudden someone started shooting at us.

...

[Narrator/ Admin]

Everyone was now shot dead except for the other people who ran away immediately when they heard the first gunshots. Is this what Khumo really wanted? I mean, she also got shot. Is this how she wanted to die with The Jones or is she not dead like others? Why was Aiden not worried about Khumo if he knew what Khumo's plan was? What is really going on here? How can The Jones and Johnny's family members die so easily? And who shot the cops?

...

## Chapter 54

[Aiden]

Well, my work here is done. I came prepared. I know that Khumo did not want me to kill the cops but I had to; 4 of the cops were working for Xavier and were planning to turn others against Khumo. Xavier thought that no one would see through his plan, but I did.

...

I came with my men and took care of everything at the graveyard. The media and the cops are interested in The Jones' scandal so I had to act very fast and be very discreet. I only allowed the media to see what Khumo only wanted them to see.

...

We arrived at our isolated warehouse and immediately Khumo appeared before me.

...

Me: (Smiles) How did I do? Are you proud of me?

Khumo: (Smiles) Mhmm. You did very good. I'm very proud of you. Well, I knew that you would not let me down, so yes, I am good, and I was never worried.

Me: Your eyes are red. Did you have to cry so much?

Khumo: My acting had to be good. Of course I had to cry like never before.

Me: (Smiles) You are so cool.

Khumo: Did the media see everything?

Me: No, the media only saw what you wanted them to see. They did not see Maya's casket and the other things you didn't want them to see, so they only saw when all The Jones and Johnny's family members were shot "dead".

Khumo: Do you think that my plan was successful? Do you think that the entire world will believe that The Jones are really dead?

Me: Yes, the plan was extremely clean so I believe that everybody will believe that The Jones and Johnny's family members are dead.

Khumo: I...

...

Our loved ones walked in. Well, it looks like they know everything now.

...

Mr T: Well, why did you not involve us, Khumo?

...

Khumo looked at me and just kept quiet.

...

Me: I am very sorry, but I had to tell your dad. He was really worried about you, so I just had to tell him.

Khumo: It's okay. I am not mad at anyone. I am really okay.

Njabulo: Oh, now I see. You wanted my fake bullets for this, didn't you?

Khumo: (Smiles) Yes. Would you please teach me how you make them?

Njabulo: (Smiles) I will teach you. So why did you also fake Johnny's family members' deaths and The Jones' deaths?

Khumo: To kill them myself. I don't want them to die easily. I want them to go through so much pain before dying.

Njabulo: That's interesting. So aren't you scared that the higher cops will investigate and find that you are behind everything that happened today? I mean, The Jones' mysterious death is...

Khumo: Trending? I know. Well, don't worry. I have planned this for years. No one will find me plus the media also believes that I'm dead. Khumo Jones died today but Camilla Modise was reborn again today.

...

She said that as she started to take off her fake face. She took her time to take off her fake face and used so many things so that the face can finally come off. I melted all over again. She is so beautiful.

...

She took off the fake bullet from her skin just after taking off the fake face.

...

Khumo: Njabulo, why are the others still unconscious? I mean, I am awake, so why are the others still unconscious?

Njabulo: Well, you are okay and up because you took the antidote prior to everything.

Khumo: Oh, I see. Well, I need someone to help me bring Johnny and Daniel to this place. I want all these people to reunite in agony.

Martin: Consider it done.

Khumo: Make sure that you do a clean job.

Martin: Of course, dear.

Khumo: (Smiles) Thank you. You are all officially working with me again. Don't mess anything up and don't let your feelings get in my way.

Mr T: I hear what you are saying but your brother, Leo loves Kelsy so we should try to find out how he is doing.

Leo: Huh?? Which Leo?? Me?? Since when??

Mr T: What do you mean? I've heard everything.

Leo: What did you hear, dad?

Mr T: I heard you talking to Kelsy on the phone. You sounded happy and you expressed your feelings at all times. I've heard you so many times.

Leo: (Laughs) What is my dad smoking?

Khumo: Leo, tell the truth. What is going on? Are you really into Kelsy?

Leo: I can't stand that girl. Why would I be into her? I'm being honest right now.

Liam: Mr T, Leo does not love Kelsy. He loves his girlfriend so much so I am thinking that maybe you heard him talking to his girlfriend.

Mr T: Oh, really? Was it not Kelsy?

Liam: I doubt.

Mr T: I didn't know that Leo had a wife and a girlfriend.

Leo: Don't put it like that. My marriage with Kelsy is fake. Yes, I never told you and the others about my girlfriend because a lot has been happening but Liam, Aiden and Njabulo know that I have a girlfriend.

Mr T: Wow

I guess that I was truly worried for nothing. That's a huge relief.

Khumo: It is. You must bring your girlfriend to us once everything settles down.

Leo: (Smiles) Okay.

Khumo: Are you that in love? Look at you, blushing.

Leo: I'm not blushing, I'm smiling.

Khumo: Eww, it's the same.

...

Everyone laughed and teased Leo so much. Well, it was all in love. Teasing Leo was fun.

...

Khumo: Well, I need everyone to take care of these people for me. Tie all these people up and I'll be right back. Call me once they are awake.

Thato: Khumo, where are you going??

Khumo: I need to cuff someone.

Me: What do you mean?

Khumo: I am interested in some guy so I am going to win him over.

Me: Heyyyy???? How...

...

She walked away. Of course I followed her.

...

[Khumo]

I said what I said because I wanted Aiden to stress and follow me.

(Laughs) He's so cute, I can't.

...

Aiden: What's funny?

Me: Oh, did I laugh out loud? Sorry. I was just thinking about something.

Aiden: Are you interested in someone else out there?

Me: Mhmm.

Aiden: What does that mean?

...

We got in the car. I drove off. Aiden could not stop asking me the same question over and over again. He was really bothered about what I said.

...

Aiden: This is so stressful. You are hurting me.

Me: How am I hurting you?

Aiden: How can you suddenly like someone else?

...

We arrived at Aiden's house.

...

Aiden: Khumo??

Me: What??

Aiden: Why are you hurting me and... woah, this is my house. Why are we here?

Me: Do you not want to see the guy I'm into?

Aiden: Is he in my house?

Me: (Smiles) What do you think?

Aiden: (Shouts) I WILL KILL HIM AND YOU WON'T BE ABLE TO STOP ME!!!!

...

He took out the gun and rushed to the house. I got out of the car and ran after him. I couldn't stop laughing.

...

[Aiden]

Why does Khumo do this to me? I thought that she loved me so why did she bring another man to my house and hurt me like this? This is not funny and she's laughing nonstop. I will kill the persons who...

...

I opened the door and choked on my words. The house was decorated so nicely. The setting was giving romantic vibes. Rose petals were falling down like rainfall. Wow, what a beautiful scenery this is.

...

Khumo: (Smiles) SURPRIIIIIIISE!!!!

Me: What... what is going on?

...

She took the gun away from me and kissed my hand.

...

Khumo: You have once asked me to be your wife and I told you that I was not ready to be your wife. I also told you that we had skipped the girlfriend and boyfriend stage so you told me that you will do things the right way. I don't know why you kept things from me but a little bird told me that you had planned something extremely romantic and beautiful on the day you were fooled by Xavier and got beat up and shot. That very same little bird also told me that you were planning to ask me to be your girlfriend.

...

Oh my goodness, why does Leo have such a big mouth?? Yes, I had planned everything but got fooled by Xavier and almost died. I didn't tell Khumo because I wanted to heal completely and plan a romantic date for us again but Leo already told Khumo everything and now Khumo beat me. But... I am really happy.

...

Khumo: Aiden, today I want to be the one to show you my feelings. You have always been bold and shown me your feelings. You also told me how you feel about me countless times so today I also want to take steps closer to you. I don't want you to be the only one taking countless steps to me. You deserve to be happy just like everyone else. I, Khumo Jones, soon to be Camilla Modise officially, love you, Aiden Camilo Smith. I love you so much and I want to ask you to be my boyfriend. I truly love you and I don't think I'd ever love someone else like the way I love you, Aiden. (Smiles) Would you please make me the happiest woman alive and be my boyfriend??

...



Trust my stupid heart to make me burst into tears. I knelt down and just cried like a little girl. How embarrassing is this?? Why am I not able to stop crying??

## Chapter 55

[Khumo]

Aiden won't stop crying. Is he that touched by what I did and said? He's so cute.

...

Me: Aiden, get up.

Aiden: Did you have to make me cry like a little girl? This is embarrassing.

Me: (Laughs) Why are you embarrassed? You look cute.

Aiden: Don't tease me.

...

I helped him get up and he hugged me.

...

Aiden: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

...

I broke off the hug and wiped off his tears.

...

Me: (Smiles) So?

Aiden: What?

Me: I am waiting for the answer.

Aiden: Yes, I would like to be your boyfriend.

Me: (Smiles) Really?

...

He smiled and nodded.

...

Me: Don't regret it later, okay?

Aiden: How can I ever regret it? I waited for this day all my life.

Me: Sorry for making you wait for a long time.

...

He cupped my face with his hands and smiled.

...

Aiden: It was worth it.

Me: Do you really think so?

Aiden: Yes, it was worth it.

Me: What's special about me?

Aiden: Everything about you is special.

...

We shared a very passionate kiss. Believe me on this one, this was our first kiss ever.

...

Me: Aiden, I need to take a shower after a long day I had.

Aiden: What long day did you have? You literally just returned from the graveyard. It's still early.

Me: (Nervous Chuckle) Ah... I...

Aiden: What are you afraid of? Losing your virginity to me?

...

Why does he have to be so blunt?? Geez, Aiden!!

...

Me: I... Let's go. The food is getting cold.

...

I attempted to walk away but he grabbed my hand.

...

Aiden: I want you to relax. We won't do anything you don't want to do.

Me: It's not like I don't want to do anything with you, I am just scared of getting extremely attached to you.

Aiden: What's wrong with getting extremely attached to me? I'm now your boyfriend so there's nothing wrong with that.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Aiden: Look at me.

Me: Aiden, stop it.

Aiden: (Laughs) It's unlike you to be so shy.

Me: I'm not shy. Don't tease me.

Aiden: Then look at me.

...

I looked at him.

...

Me: Why do you always have to joke around? You are so annoying.

Aiden: (Smiles) Sorry, my beautiful lady.

Me: Fine. I'm scared. This dating thing is new to me. The only things I know are to study, to be smart and to kill. I don't know a lot about relationships. I've been cold all my life. Do you blame me?

Aiden: Not at all. I understand you and it's okay to be scared, but don't worry about anything. You'll be fine.

Me: Will I really be fine?

Aiden: Yes, I have already started seeing the warmer side of you. You are doing a good job.

Me: (Smiles) Really??

Aiden: I mean it. I was shocked when I saw how you treated me the time I regained consciousness but I was also impressed and happy.

...

I smiled and hugged him.

...

Me: Thank you.

Aiden: (Smiles) It's okay.

We sat down and had something to eat and drink. It was so beautiful. I enjoyed being with Aiden and doing things with him and I was willing to lose my virginity to him.

...

We took a shower together after eating. Yes, surprisingly the taking of a shower together was suggested by me. Shocking, right?

...

We did so many things together. I was truly happy so one thing led to the other and I ended up losing my virginity to Aiden. I didn't have regrets at all. I gave my virginity to the man I love with all my heart so I was happy and very much in love.

...

[Njabulo]

Khumo and Aiden turned their phones off and it's annoying because Khumo told us to call her when The Jones and the rest wake up.

...

They are awake and we have been trying to get reach of Khumo and Aiden to no avail.

...

Me: Where on earth are they? Are they okay wherever they are?

Mr T: They are at Aiden's house. I've just checked.

Mr Smith: Should we go and get them?

Mr T: Yes, we should.

Freya: No. We should not do that.

Kate: I am with Freya on this one. Leave them.

Me: And why should we leave them?

Letty: Isn't it obvious? They wanted some time alone.

Me: But...

Letty: My son, stop it. Khumo and Aiden will come.

Me: So what should we do now?

Freya: Let's begin torturing those horrible people.

Me: Won't Khumo be mad at us?

Freya: Not at all.

Me: Okay. Fine with me.

...

We all agreed to start torturing The Jones and Johnny's family members but we made sure that Liam and "Kelsy's husband" were not revealed yet so that we can later give May and Kelsy a shock of their lives. The Modises also did not reveal their true faces yet. My goodness, this is going to be fun.

...

[Mr Jones]

Who are these people? And why is Njabulo with them? Why is Martin Modise and Gerard Smith with them? Why is Letty with them? What is going on here? And where is Khumo? I can see that Johnny and Daniel are here but where's Khumo?

...

Me: Who... who are you people?

Mr T: You don't have any right to ask us that question.

Me: Please... Please spare us. Let's talk... about this.

Mr T: What's there to talk about?

...

Why do I feel like I know this man's voice?

...

Xavier: I know them. They are... Uhhhhhhhhhh!!!!

...

Xavier started screaming because hot iron was put on his shoulder.

...

Nandi: (Cries) We are sorry. Please spare us. We will do anything for you. Don't hurt my son.

...

Some woman slapped Nandi.

...

Nandi: Freya, please don't hurt us.

Me: Fr— Freya??

Nandi: Yes. She's Freya, she...

...

Freya strangled Nandi.

...

What am I missing here? Whenever Nandi and Xavier tries to talk about these people, they are stopped by getting tortured even more.

...

Freya? Could it be Hector's wife? Uhh, no. She doesn't look like Hector Modise's wife. I guess they only share a name. The Modises passed away a long time ago, right??

...

May: Dad, this is all your fault. You and mom did this to us.

Sarah: May, stop it. Where is my baby girl? Where is Khumo?

Me: I— (Groans) I wanted to ask the— the same question.

May: Are you still worried about that traitor even at a time like this?

Sarah: May, shut up.

May: I hate you and Dean Jones. You are the worst parents ever and you let a snake into our house. We lived with a snake for many many years in our house.

...

“It was never your house, to begin with.”; said some girl, walking in wearing a red dress and carrying an axe.

...

Me: Who— who are you??

Her: Guess. Who do you think I am?

Me: You look like an old friend of mine and his wife. You...

Her: (Shouts) DON'T YOU DARE REFER TO HIM AS AN OLD FRIEND OF YOURS!!!!

...

She said that as she kicked me on my chest until I spat blood.

...

What is she made of? How can she kick me and internally hurt me like this? Who is she? And what's with the axe? I've never been in the dark like the way I'm in the dark today. I hate it.

## Chapter 56

[Khumo]

I can't believe that Mr. Jones is not able to recognize me or at least my voice. I mean, how can he not recognize my voice? And how can he fail to see the fact that I look like my parents?

...

Mr Jones: Who are you?

Me: Are you really not able to tell or are you a fool?

May: You, witch. Who are you and...

...

I didn't waste time, I slapped May.

...

Me: Fine. I'll introduce myself but a price will be paid. You are all fools. Oh, Xav, are you also not able to recognize me? You've seen this face before when I revealed it to everyone.

Xavier: Of course I know it's you, Khumo.

...

The others looked shocked including Nandi. I mean, Johnny's family members and Mr Jones' children know everything about me but they have never seen my true face. Xavier is the only one who saw my real face before.

...

Sarah: Khu... Khumo? Xavier, what do you mean?

Xavier: She's Khumo. Your traitor of a daughter.

Me: (Laughs) Look who's calling me a traitor. Are you joking right now?

Sarah: Hold on, I'm lost.

Me: (Smiles) It's okay, mom. I'll "find" you.

...

I laughed, looked at Thato and nodded. Thato immediately understood what I was trying to tell her. She connected my phone to the projector and played a perfectly edited video of me, changing my faces from the age of 8 until now.

...

Sarah: Khumo?? Our Khumo?? Who... (Cries) Who are you? What is going on here? How do you have two faces and why??

...

I rolled my eyes.

...

Me: You are so slow and boring. Fine. I'll introduce myself but that's going to cost you. Deal?

...

She just stared at me and continued to cry.

...

Me: The introduction will cost you a lot. (Smiles) I am starting now. My name is...

Mr Jones: You are related to— to—...

Me: How dare you interrupt me and fail to finish your sentence? You will really get on my nerves, Dean.

Mr Jones: You are related to Hector and Freya Mod— Mod—...

Me: (Shouts) DISE, DISE!! MODISE!! YOU ARE SO ANNOYING. I AM NOT THE ONE WHO TORTURED YOU SO WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS TO ME?? WHY ARE YOU WASTING MY TIME BY NOT BEING ABLE TO FINISH YOUR DAMN SENTENCES?? DEAN JONES, I HATE YOU, I HATE YOU SO MUCH!!!!

...

I said that as I chopped off Johnny's other finger with a very sharp knife that was on the table.

...

Johnny screamed his lungs out and others were crying except for Johnny's sons and Mr Jones. I could see the fear in Mr Jones eyes and I truly liked it so much.

...

Xavier: You are a lunatic, Khumo. How can you chop off someone's finger like that without even thinking twice? How do you sleep at night?

...

I laughed and spoke softly and calmly.

...

Me: Who turned me into what I am right now? Chopping off a finger is nothing. I will do the worst. There will be so much blood here by the end of the day.

May: The cops will deal with you. You...

Me: (Laughs) Are you sure?

May: Yes, one of the cops work for Xavier and...

Me: Oh, don't worry. My loving boyfriend, Aiden told me about the cop who works for Xavier. To cut the long story short, that guy died. What all of you got from the helicopter was fake bullets but what Aiden used to shoot the cops was real bullets.

May: You are lying. You...

Me: Believe whatever you want to believe. I really don't care. The entire world believes that you are dead.

Nandi: What happens if our bodies are not found?



Me: Do you see a fool when looking at me? Do you think that I didn't plan properly? Everyone believes that you are dead and bodies will definitely be found; they are probably found by now. Well it's obviously fake bodies but who would know? The dead bodies resemble all of you, including Khumo Jones. (Laughs) You didn't see that one coming, right?

Mr Jones: What will you benefit from this if you also faked your own death?

Me: (Smiles) You finally finished your sentence. I like that. Well, you are still not getting it, are you? Didn't you leave everything in my name if ever something happens to you? I received everything you gave to me as someone different. I didn't take anything from you as Khumo Jones. I recently changed what had to be changed. Yes, at first I received your riches as Khumo Jones but recently I changed everything. You may have lost everything but I didn't lose anything at all. (Laughs) What do you think? Am I smarter than Camilla Modise or not?

Nandi: (Shouts) I HATE YOU SO MUCH. YOU ARE AN EVIL CHILD!! JUST LOOK AT HOW YOU ARE LAUGHING!!

Me: (Laughs) Shouting and calling me names won't change anything. Stop wasting your beautiful voice, ma'am.

Sarah: Why? Why, Khumo? Why us? What do you have against us?

...

It's funny how Mr and Mrs Jones are still not able to tell that I'm Camilla Modise.

...

Me: Oh, you finally stopped crying. I hate it a lot. Who said that I want you to stop crying? I need to see you crying so that I can be happy.

Sarah: You are truly psychotic.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

Sarah: That was not a compliment. Are you stupid??

Me: I don't care.

...

I got a phone call from Aiden and immediately answered it.

...

[Aiden]

I called Khumo because I didn't go back to the warehouse with her. I was doing some diggings in order to find Thato's mom.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Khumo: Hey, is everything okay?

Me: Yes, everything is coming together. I have something to tell you.

Khumo: What is it?

Me: Thato's mom is close by but I'm not able to find her.

Khumo: Close by? How close?

Me: Very close.

Khumo: Is she in the same country as us?

Me: Yes, she is.

Khumo: Do you think that she's safe?

Me: I think so but I have so many questions like how is she in this country? Why didn't she go back to her children? Did she move on? I need answers.

Khumo: Let's focus on finding her first but make sure that Thato does not get hurt in the process.

Me: I got you.

Khumo: Please be safe and don't overwork yourself.

Me: (Smiles) Do you love me that much?

Khumo: Do you have to be like this now? Silly.

Me: I'm very happy today. I don't think that I'll be able to sleep tonight.

Khumo: Everyone is looking at me now. Stop it. Let me go back to what I was doing.

Me: Okay. Is it fun there?

Khumo: Mhmm. You are missing out.

Me: Don't finish Johnny's fingers. Leave one for me.

Khumo: (Laughs) You are stupid. Finish your work for the day and come by.

Me: I got you. I love you so much, babe.

Khumo: I uhh you too.

Me: Huh?? What was that??

Khumo: You are so annoying. Bye.

Me: (Laughs) Do you know how many times you told me that you love me earlier on when we were making love and...

Khumo: AIDEN!!!!

Me: (Laughs) Sorry. Bye, baby.

Khumo: Bye. Come back soon.

Me: Okay.

...

I hung up.

...

I am truly in love with Khumo and my feelings for her are driving me crazy and it's a "good crazy".

## Chapter 57

[Aiden]

I was about to drive to my house when Mr T's car suddenly stopped in front of my car. Geez, does he want to kill me or himself? I almost hit his car.

...

He got out of the car and came to my car.

...

Me: Do you want to kill us? What's wrong?

Mr T: Please stop all of it. It's getting out of hand.

Me: What are you talking about?

Mr T: My Little Diamond.

Me: What about her?

Mr T: We have caused traffic. Let's park next to the road and talk.

Me: Okay.

...

He went back to his car. We parked our cars next to the road and stood outside.

...

Me: What's going on?

Mr T: Hatred, anger and coldness are consuming my daughter and I am worried about her. You have been helping her since she was 8 years old,

she listens to you and she loves you. Please talk her out of this entire mess. Please save my daughter, Aiden.

Me: I don't understand. What do you want me to do?

Mr T: Please tell Khumo to stop everything she's doing and leave the rest to me.

Me: Are you telling me that you want those horrible people to live?

Mr T: No, that's not what I'm saying. I just want Khumo to stay out of it. You should also stay out of it. I will take care of everything with Martin and your father. I want everyone else to stay out of it especially Khumo. She may be smart and everything but we are slowly losing her to hatred, anger and coldness. Don't you want her to be happy?

Me: I do. I really do but I can't do what you are asking me to do.

Mr T: Aiden, you didn't see her. She walked in wearing a red dress and carrying an axe. She looked cold like never before. The way she chopped off Johnny's finger and kept laughing made me realize that I don't want my daughter to be consumed by hatred, anger and coldness. I don't want this anymore, Aiden.

...

I didn't see Khumo but I believe Mr T. He looks extremely worried and now I'm also worried. Could it be that Khumo is really getting consumed by hatred, anger and coldness? I am now getting worried.

...

Mr T: Aiden??

Me: I wanted to go back to my house to do something but it's fine. Let's go to the warehouse.

Mr T: Will you stop her?

Me: I have to see her first and act.

Mr T: Fine. You will see for yourself. Khumo is really losing it. She looks psychotic and it's killing me.

Me: Nobody wants that. Let's go.

Mr T: Okay.

...

We got into our cars and left.

...

We finally arrived at the warehouse and we hid ourselves. I saw exactly what Mr T told me. Khumo was truly losing it; in-fact, she looked crazy and I really understand why her father does not want this for her anymore.

...

Khumo's hands were now covered in blood and I could see May just lying there on the floor. We were a little far so I couldn't tell if May was alive or not.

...

I looked at Mr T.

...

Me: What's going on? Is May dead?

Mr T: I don't know. May was fine when I snuck out of the warehouse.

Me: I think that Khumo did something to May. Look at that blood.

Mr T: I don't have a problem with all these bad people dying but I don't want things to be done this way. My wife used to be crazy and I feel like if we don't do anything to stop Khumo from the brutal killing then she might go crazy.

Me: It's possible. She used to have a mental breakdown a lot and end up hospitalized so I understand what you are saying.

Mr T: Please do something. I'll forever be indebted to you, Aiden.

Me: Let me try. Let's go.

...

[Khumo]

Oh, Aiden is here. Wait, why is he coming in with my daddy? Was my daddy not around this entire time? I didn't know that.

...

Aiden: (Smiles) Hey... I...

...

Aiden looked at May.

...

Me: What is it?

Aiden: What did you do to her?

Me: (Lau Aiden: Khumo, I am serious.

Xavier: Aiden, you love a crazy girl. Khumo is heartless and she...

Aiden: (Shouts) SHUT UP, XAVIER!!

...

What is wrong with Aiden? Is he no longer siding with me?

...

[Aiden]

I grabbed Khumo's hand and led her outside the warehouse.

...

Khumo: What's wrong with you?

Me: Did you really cut off May's intestines? Do you have to be that brutal?

Khumo: Why do you sound like you are against me?

Me: I am not against you but I don't want you to be brutal.

Khumo: If you had looked at May closely, you'd notice that I didn't cut off her intestines. What is wrong with you?

Me: What about the blood in your hands? What about May? What did you do to her?

Khumo: You are getting on my nerves, Aiden. Why are you suddenly acting like this?

Me: I just want you to be happy. I don't want you to be consumed by hatred, anger and coldness.

Khumo: (Laughs) You are funny.

Me: I am serious, Khumo. Let's go home.

Khumo: What did you say? Go home? Are you listening to yourself right now?

Me: I am. Let's go home. I want you to calm down and think about everything.

Khumo: I hate what you are doing. Now I feel like really cutting off May's intestines.

...

She attempted to leave but I grabbed her hand.

...

Me: Khumo, stop it.

Khumo: Leave my hand.

Me: I am begging you.

Khumo: (Shouts) I SAID LEAVE ME ALONE!!!!

Me: I'm not leaving you.

Khumo: I will hurt you.

Me: Go ahead. I don't care.

Khumo. I mean it, Aiden. Let me go or else I will hurt you.

Me: Do your worst. I won't let you go.

Khumo: Do you really want to please my enemies? Will you really do this today?

Me: I'm sorry. I can't let you go.

...

She attempted to push me away with her other hand and I didn't care. I was not going to let her go back to those people and continue to slowly go crazy. Khumo needs help and I blame myself for always supporting her and cleaning after her. Khumo needs serious help and I don't want to make a mistake again so I won't let her go.

...

[Freya]

Everyone noticed that Khumo was now losing it. We were truly worried about our dear child. My daughter deserves to be happy just like everyone else so everything needs to stop. We all started getting worried when we saw how unstoppable Khumo was and how she couldn't stop laughing like someone who was crazy. I know that we may be going soft by now but Khumo needs to stop it.

...

We don't have a problem with these horrible people dying but why should Khumo suffer with them? Khumo has suffered enough and she should live a happy life without being consumed by hatred.

...

I went closer to my husband and whispered.

...

Me: Thank you for bringing Aiden with you. I'm glad that you saw what we all saw.

Mr T: We really need to help our daughter. Revenge is finishing her off. She's slowly losing it and I am not here for that.

Me: You are absolutely right. What do you think should be done?

Mr T: Let's wait for Aiden but personally I don't want my daughter to carry on with this.

Me: Me too. She's still young. She must enjoy life and stop killing. I want her to heal.

Mr T: Don't worry. She will end up listening to Aiden.

Me: I hope so.

Mr T: What happened to May?

Me: Khumo gave her poison. She's not yet dead.

Mr T: So what about the blood on the floor and on Khumo's hands?

Me: That's not blood. It's red paint mixed with poison. Khumo made May drink it.

Mr T: Wow, she's truly losing it. I know that The Jones wronged us but we should not be like them. We should stop all these killings or everything should be left to me, Martin and Aiden's father.

Me: I hear you.

...

And all of a sudden we heard a gunshot. We immediately ran outside to Khumo and Aiden.

ghs) I cut off her intestines.

## Chapter 58

[Khumo]

Everyone came running when they heard the gunshot.

...

Freya: Who got shot?

Me: No one. Aiden is threatening to end his life if I don't stop what I started. He is the one who pulled the trigger. His bullet hit the wall.

Freya: Oh, thank goodness. We were so scared.

Me: If I may ask, does everyone think that I'm going crazy?

...

They all kept quiet.

...

Me: Fine. I got my answer. Well, I'm not going crazy.

Thato: I believe you. You are not going crazy but please think about your parents. They don't want you to go through that path.



Me: Which path? I took it the moment Hector Modise asked me to avenge everyone, did I not? I wanted to die with my family members on that horrible day but Hector Modise asked me to go through this path, didn't he?

Mr T: I understand and I apologize. I didn't think that things would be this bad. I want you to enjoy your life.

Me: Is that why you put Aiden to this? Threatening me with his life? Is that fair?

Mr T: I...

Me: You are all getting on my nerves.

Leo: Khumo, kill them if you want to. You don't have to torture them by chopping off their body parts.

Me: (Laughs) Who chopped off Johnny's finger and sent it to The Jones? It was definitely not me so I'm finishing what all of you started. Am I wrong??

...

They kept quiet.

...

Me: You are all hypocrites. Don't tell me what to do. It won't end well. Aiden, shoot yourself. I'll live and find myself another partner. How dare you threaten me??

Aiden: Don't you care about me at all?

Me: I do but I won't let anyone threaten me. I hate that.

...

I used force and pushed him away. He got hurt since he is still not healed but I walked away and acted like I didn't care.

...

I went back inside and went straight to Nandi.

...

Me: Where is she?

...

My loved ones came back inside, just stood there and watched me.

...

Me: Heyyy, I am asking you a question. Where is she?

Nandi: Who are you talking about?

Me: I am talking about Thato's real mother.

Nandi: (Laughs) I thought that you always know everything. I am Thato's mother.

Me: You are not. Where is she?

Nandi: Just shut up and...

...

I attempted to stab Xavier with a knife and Nandi stopped me.

...

Nandi: Stop, please!!

Me: Where is Nandipha? You are indeed Nandi but pretending to be Thato's mom, Nandipha. You got away with it because Nandipha for short is Nandi so Martin also thought that you were Nandipha and just shortening your name by referring to yourself as Nandi. You are the most horrible woman I've ever met.

Nandi: I am Nandipha. Nandi died. Yes, I call myself Nandi just to shorten my name. I'm really Thato's mom.

Me: Do you really want to play games at a time like this? Should I kill someone so that you can finally understand that I'm not playing?

...

She kept quiet.

...

I went closer to Johnny who was slowly passing out.

...

Me: Mhmm, he lost blood but it's not enough. Should I cut off his head??

...

Nandi started panicking.

...

Nandi: No, no, no. I will tell you the truth. Please spare my husband.

Me: Mhmm. I'm feeling a little generous right now so I will spare your perverted husband and listen to you.

...

I wiped my hands with her clothes and sat down.

...

Me: Go ahead.

Nandi: You are right. I'm just Nandi. I'm not Nandipha but I made Martin and his children believe that I'm Nandipha so that they can hate the real Nandipha. I planned everything and captured Nandipha but she somehow managed to escape. I don't know where she is right now. I never found her and I don't know if she's still alive or not.

Me: Why would you be so cruel to your own sister?

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Nandi: I hate her so much.

Me: Why? Why?

Nandi: Because she looked like me but still received more favor, attention, care, love than me. I hate her so much. Life was always easy for her but life was horrible to me. I had to steal her life.

Me: (Laughs) So you hate your own sister that much over such stupidity? You are jealous to a point where you'd want to kill your sister and steal her life. You are crazy.

Nandi: I don't care.

Me: What did you get from what you did??

Nandi: (Laughs) I succeeded in separating her from her husband and children. I succeeded in turning her own husband and children against her. Where is she now? She's obviously not with her husband and children. She's... (Laughs) she's probably dead by now.

...

I got mad and slapped her.

...

Me: (Shouts) SHUT UP!! SHUT UP, YOU CRAZY B\*TCH!!!!

...

She continued to laugh. I lost it and stabbed Alfonso. Nandi immediately stopped laughing and cried.

...

Me: (Laughs) It's my turn to laugh now. Alfonso will soon die but firstly, let me reveal my people to everyone. Aww, unfortunately Oliver died without knowing the entire truth and the real me. (Smiles) Well, we move. You can all tell him everything when you finally meet. You are going to him very soon.

...

I looked at May.

...

Me: She's so strong. I can't believe that she's still alive even after consuming poisoned paint. (Laughs) May-May, would you like to see your boyfriend, Liam? Do you even know who he is? Kelsy, do you want to see your husband?

May: Cr— cruel.

Me: (Smiles) Am I cruel? Aww, thank you.

...

I asked my loved ones to reveal their true faces and true identities. Mr Jones was extremely shocked when he saw all The Modises alive.

...

Me: It has been 14 years but I'm glad that you were able to recognize them from the beginning. By the way, Khumo Jones died today. Say hello to Camilla Modise and her entire family members.

...

The horrible family was shocked like never before. Mr Jones was defeated and you could tell by just looking at his face.

...

Kelsy: (Shouts) KHUMO, YOU ARE TRULY CRUEL. HOW CAN YOU FOOL ALL OF US FOR THESE YEARS?? ARE YOU THAT HEARTLESS??

...

Hold on, why is it that I am seen as a bad person for avenging my loved ones? Didn't The Jones feel sorry for The Modises when they made them meet their demise? Why is it that I am expected to be nice and have a heart? Who had a heart when my loved ones were wronged? Double standards, huh?? Wow!!

...

Me: You are truly shameless, Kelsy.

Kelsy: AND YOU ARE CRUEL. YOU ARE AN EVIL CHILD!!!!

Me: Am I?? Are you even thinking about the fact that I'm only retaliating? I didn't start any of this. Your evil family started this. How am I evil?

Kelsy: YOU ARE EVIL JUST LIKE YOUR ENTIRE FAMILY MEMBERS. YOUR BROTHER IS ALSO EVIL. HE PRETENDED TO

LOVE ME AND MARRIED ME. WE TREATED HIM LIKE A FAMILY MEMBER BUT HE WAS FAKE FROM THE BEGINNING. I HATE ALL OF YOU!!

Me: The feeling is mutual, babe. Just shut up already. You are too loud.

...

She sat there and just cried.

...

May: Li— Liam, you ar— are truly cr— cr— cruel and—...

Me: Just shut up already. You are speaking too slow for my liking, May.

...

I immediately played a video of the day Maya was abducted and disguised as me. The Jones were now in tears. They were extremely heartbroken.

...

Me: Do you all see how Camilla Modise never died? It's because Maya died for me. (Laughs) My daddy and brother are smart, right? You all believed that I died. Mr and Mrs Jones referred to me as Camilla Modise of The Jones Family. What they didn't know was that I was actually the real Camilla Modise. They treated me like an egg and always protected me. They trusted me blindly and now they are... (Laughs) and now they are burning. It's truly funny.

Mr T: Dean, I never had anything against you but your greed pushed you to hurt me and my family. I was never like this but you pushed me and everyone else into what we are today.

Freya: You were truly horrible to our family. You didn't have to do what you did.

Jenna: And the rape part was not necessary at all. You could've just instructed your men to only kill us. I am the same age as Kelsy, could you not think before instructing your men to rape us?

Kelly: You were truly cruel to us, but now the tables are turned.

Everyone including me thought that Khumo aka Camilla was going crazy but now that I think about it, our sister is only trying to heal. A part of me is already healing by just looking at the agony you are in.

Jenna: Kelly is right. This had to happen in order for us to completely heal and move on.

...

Finally they are getting it. I mean, I am really not going crazy so I am disappointed that everyone thought that I was going crazy. I will be fine after this and definitely go for counseling.

...

I looked at Aiden and he looked to the other side. Well, I guess he's mad at me for pushing him and hurting him. He will come around. I'll apologize to him later.

...

Everyone said what they wanted to say. I allowed everyone to offload and feel better.

...

I will definitely kill The Jones and Johnny's family members but firstly I want to find the real Nandipha and show Nandi that she ended up losing. I also can't bring myself to killing Sofia because she has never been mean to me. I may be cold but I don't kill innocent people. Sofia is innocent so I need to let her go but firstly, I have to make sure that she loses her memory. I don't want her to miss her family. I want her to always be happy. Call me soft, it's fine, I really won't kill an innocent person.

## Chapter 59

\*\*Khumo will now be referred to as Camilla. Mr T will now be referred to as Hector.\*\*

[Two Days Later]

[Camilla]

Aiden is still refusing to talk to me but he's still helping me and everyone else find Nandipha. It's weird because he talks to me through Liam, who is now getting tired of being in the middle.

...

I arrived at Aiden's house and found Liam in the kitchen.

...

Me: Hey, Liam.

Liam: Hey, how are you?

Me: (Smiles) I am so happy to see you.

Liam: You are only happy to see me because you want to use me.

Me: What do you mean?

Liam: You and Aiden are childish. I won't be your messenger anymore. I'm tired.

Me: How am I childish? I really tried to talk to Aiden and he ignored me. What else can I do now?

Liam: Aiden is childish. Why do you love him? You are a fool.

Me: Aiden is not that bad. And shouldn't you be siding with your brother right now?

Liam: I side with the truth. Aiden was wrong to threaten you.

Me: And I was wrong to push him.

Liam: What else could you have done? You pushed him because he was not letting you go.

Me: I know but I hurt him by pushing him.

Liam: You had to do what you had to do.

Me: You were right, weren't you?

Liam: About what?

Me: You are truly my fan.

Liam: (Smiles) I am. Am I wrong?

Me: Why do you like me so much?

Liam: I love it when females or women can stand for themselves. It's truly attractive.

...

Aiden walked in.

...

Aiden: She still won't be yours. Stop hitting on my girlfriend.

...

He called me his girlfriend, I still have a chance to make things right.

...

Liam: How am I hitting on her? I'm just telling her the truth. Khumo is a defini... I mean, Camilla is a definition of a real king. If she were to rule the world, everything would be in order.

Me: Did you just call me a king?

Liam: Yes, you are a King among Queens.

...

Is that even a compliment? Well, we move. I'll take it.

...

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

Liam: (Smiles) Of course.

...

Aiden just stood there and rolled his eyes.

...

Aiden: Liam, please tell Camilla that...

Liam: I think dad is calling me. I need to go.

Aiden: Huh? Nobody is calling you. Dad is not even here.

Liam: He is. Bye.

Aiden: I...

...

Liam rushed out of the kitchen. I looked at Aiden and smiled.

...

Me: Hi.

...

Aiden looked away.

...

Me: Aiden, I am sorry for what I did to you. I felt like you were against me. I mean, everyone else can call me crazy but not you because I feel like you know me very well.

...

He still kept quiet.

...

Me: Khumo was the one who pushed you, not Camilla. Please don't be mad at Camilla.

...

I went closer to him.

...



Me: I am really sorry. I will be a better person and a better partner from now on. I won't bully you or hurt you. I promise.

...

Is this how relationships are? Will I always be apologizing to Aiden for everything? It's tiring but I will try my best to change. I learned to be cold from a young age so I always did things and never apologized to anyone. I raised myself, can I really be blamed for sometimes being a bully? Actually I'm not really a bully, I just don't like being threatened so when Aiden threatened me, old wounds were now open again.

...

I will do better from now on. I will need some time to learn how to live with loving people. I lived with monsters after what they did to my family so I always had to be on the lookout and protect myself. I did what I did to Aiden because I was angry but ... it won't happen again.

...

Me: Aiden?

Aiden: Actions speak louder than words.

Me: I know but...

Aiden: Did you see how you pushed me? That's the reason why I wanted you to stop what you were doing. I didn't want anger to consume you. You pushed me out of anger, right?

...

I nodded.

...

Aiden: Do you now understand why I didn't want you to continue what you were doing?

Me: I do but you also thought that I was crazy.

Aiden: You would also believe that you were going crazy, had you seen what everyone else saw.

Me: How did I look?

Aiden: Crazy and scary. You looked psychotic. And you kept laughing like a possessed person.

Me: I am sorry.

Aiden: I will forgive you only because I love you.

Me: (Smiles) Really?

Aiden: Yes. But don't repeat what you did to me ever again.

Me: Okay. I promise. I...

...

Thato's helper, Lydia walked in. It's always nice to see her. I never forget people who are/were good to me. Remember how I was once beat up by Mr Jones' children years ago when I was 8 years old and went to the park then met Thato and her helper there and got rushed to the hospital? I never forgot Lydia's kindness since that day so I'm always happy to see her plus she is like a part of us. She's like a family to everyone.

...

Me: (Smiles) Aunt Lydia, why are you here?

Lydia: (Smiles) I heard that you came here so I am here to talk to you.

Me: Me?

Lydia: Yes. I would love to talk to you alone.

Me: Okay.

Aiden: Why am I excluded?

Lydia: (Smiles) Sorry, Aiden.

...

Aiden left the kitchen.

...

Me: Let's sit down.

Lydia: Okay.

...

We sat down.

...

Me: Is everything okay?

Lydia: Dear, I need to tell you everything because I trust you.

Me: What do you want to tell me?

Lydia: I heard that you are looking for this woman.

...

She showed me a photo of Nandipha.

...

Me: Who told you?

Lydia: Your mom.

Me: Oh, yes. I am looking for Thato's mom. Her name is Nandipha.

Lydia: I have seen her before.

Me: Really? Where?

Lydia: I don't remember everything but I think that I used to live with her before moving in with Martin and his children.

...

Wait, did she say that she thinks that she used to live with Nandipha? What does that even mean? Yes, I know that her memory is not really good because of the accident she had back in the past even before she met me and my loved ones but I really want her to be clear with me right now.

...

Me: Are you not sure at all?

...

She nodded.

...

Lydia: Is she only Thato's mom?

Me: No. She's a mother to all 4 of uncle Martin's children.

Lydia: I see. Well, I have been disturbed ever since Freya showed me the photos. I really think that I know... uhh... or am I wrong?

Me: No, no. You are definitely not wrong. I also believe that you know her. You wouldn't just be disturbed for nothing and make up a story.

Aunt Lydia, I need you to remember everything. I'm begging you.

Lydia: I may not remember everything but I remember where I used to live with her.

...

Is she now sure that they lived together?

...

Me: For real? Would you be able to take me there?

Lydia: Yes. I always forget everything but I never forget that place.

Me: Do you think that Nandipha still stays there?

Lydia: I don't know but we should still go and check.

Me: Okay. When?

Lydia: (Smiles) I am going out with Freya, Kate and Letty so I don't know yet. Anytime you are free.

Me: I am free now.

Lydia: But I am going out with my friends. How about tomorrow?

...

How can mom and the other women go out at a time like this? Couldn't they wait for everything to settle down? Drama Queens!!

...

Lydia: Dear?

Me: Fine. Tomorrow is fine.

Lydia: Okay. But please don't tell everyone what I told you until I am sure about everything. I don't want to give them false hopes. Everyone else means the world to me. Martin and his children never treated me bad. I don't want to hurt anyone.

Me: I understand.

Lydia: (Smiles) I need to go. Bye.

Me: Liam let you in, right?

...

She nodded.

...

Me: Okay. He will let you out again.

Lydia: Okay. No problem.

...

She gave me a hug and left. Aiden walked in.

...

Me: I know that you heard everything. What do you think?

Aiden: I believe her and trust her.

Me: Me too. I can't be wrong like the way I was wrong about Xavier.

Aiden: Me too. But I feel like we might disturb Aunt Lydia's peace of mind if we allow her to remember the things she forgot.

Me: I know but she's the one who came to me. She obviously wants to help.

Aiden: Absolutely.

Me: I hope that everything will be fine. By the way, I won't be going back to the warehouse to see The Jones and Johnny's family members.

Everyone was right, I should focus on being happy. Seeing those horrible people in agony helps me heal but just seeing them also makes me angry. I don't want anger to consume me. I want a happy life so my time with those people stops here. You can all take care of the rest for me. Khumo Jones is dead, Camilla Modise does not want to live like Khumo Jones; she wants to go back to who she was before her family was wronged years ago. Camilla Modise wants to go back to being happy.

Aiden: (Smiles) I love that. I'm here for you. All your loved ones are here for you.

...

He kissed me and hugged me. I felt different. I was really starting to feel free; it was an amazing feeling.

## Chapter 60

[The Next Day]

[Camilla]

Aunt Lydia took us to where she used to live with Thato's mom. Surprisingly she brought uncle Martin along. I don't know how she ended up bringing uncle Martin along because the last time I checked, she didn't want anyone else to know.

...

Uncle Martin immediately recognized the place.

...

Martin: I know this place. It's now renovated and better than years ago but I can still recognize it.

Me: Have you been here before? For what?

Martin: Nandipha used to live here. This is her home. This is her parents' house.

Me: Her parents' house? That's a relief so did Aunt Lydia also live here?

Martin: I... I don't know.

Lydia: Yes, I used to live here with Nandipha. Let's go inside.

Martin: How come I've never seen you here before? I've been to this place so many times.

Lydia: I also don't have memories of this place but I still have Nandipha's face in my head. I have memories of Nandipha living here.

Martin: Huh??

...

How does she know that she used to live with Thato's mom here when she says that she doesn't have memories of this place? How can she have memories of someone else living here and fail to have her own memories living here? Trust me, asking any more questions will confuse me more. Aunt Lydia will make you feel like you are crazy.

...

Lydia: What is it?

Martin: Let's just go inside. You lost me.

Me: I'm also lost and I won't ask any more questions to avoid getting lost even more.

Lydia: Oh, sorry. I didn't mean to confuse you but the truth is I'm also confused.

Me: It's fine. Let's go inside.

...

We went inside.

...

The caretaker immediately recognized uncle Martin but couldn't recognize Aunt Lydia. I was extremely lost. How can the caretaker fail to recognize Aunt Lydia when Aunt Lydia said that she used to live here? Who is Aunt Lydia? Is she a fraud? What's her game? I was now on my toes. I can't afford to be fooled by anyone so I have to be on my toes.

...

[An Hour Later]

[Hector]

I was driving back from the warehouse with Thato, and my daughters when I got a call from my daughter, Khu... I mean, Camilla. I immediately answered the call.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, my baby.

Camilla: Daddy, how are you?

Me: I'm okay. How are you?

Camilla: I am very happy. Is Thato with you? I heard that she went to the warehouse with you.

Me: Yes, she's with me. Is everything okay?

Camilla: Where's her phone? It's just ringing.

Me: I will give her the phone.

Camilla: Put me on loudspeaker.

Me: Okay.

...

I did as she asked.

...

Me: You are on loudspeaker. What's going on?

Thato: Khu... Camilla, are you okay?

Camilla: I'm going to beat you up for not answering your phone.

Thato: (Giggles) I... I left my phone in your room. Sorry.

Camilla: And I wonder why Jenna and Kelly are not answering my calls.

Me: Their phones are probably on silent.

Jenna: I left mine at home.

Kelly: Me too. I didn't see the need to bring it along.

Camilla: Fools. Well, I have good news for everyone.

Me: Did you find Nandipha?

Camilla: Yes, I did. We finally found her.

Thato: (Smiles) Are you serious? Where is she? How is she? Is she...

Camilla: One question at a time.

Thato: Sorry. I'm just feeling happy and nervous.

Camilla: Thato, God has always favored you.

Thato: What do you mean?

Camilla: I always wanted you to be happy. God has always favored you that's why finding your mom was easy. I wish we had come to her parents' home a long time ago. We really found your mom and trust me

when I say that she loves you and your siblings a lot. She still loves your dad that's why she never moved on.

Thato: Did she really not move on?

Camilla: Yes. She never moved on. She loves her family so much.

Thato: Did she agree to come back with you?

Camilla: Yes. Let's all meet up at the warehouse.

Me: Dear, Aiden told me that you don't want to get involved with The Jones an...

Camilla: Daddy, please trust me. I won't go back to the warehouse to torture anyone. I just want to show Nandipha to Nandi. I will leave after that. You are allowed to get rid of those horrible people the moment I step away from the warehouse with Nandipha. I still kept those people alive for this moment.

Me: Okay. No problem. I'll take a u-turn.

Camilla: Thank you. Bye.

Me: Bye.

Camilla: Thato, don't be nervous. Everything is going to be fine. Your mom is truly the best.

Thato: (Smiles) Okay. See you soon.

Camilla: Bye.

...

She hung up.

...

[Thato]

Oh, my goodness. I'm so excited and nervous. Does my mom really love me and everyone else? Did she really not move on?

...

We arrived at the warehouse. Camilla and my dad arrived shortly after us.

...

Me: Where... where is my mom? Did she change her mind?

Camilla: Wait for the right moment.

Nandi: (Laughs) You are lying. There's no way you found Nandipha. I couldn't find her for years. How can you find her so easily and soon?



Camilla: (Smiles) Would you like to see her? She's healthy and still loves her family.

Nandi: You are lying.

Martin: She's not lying. She's completely different from you. That's why we all couldn't find her from the beginning.

Nandi: You are all lying to me. Different or not, I don't care. I still don't like her. How is she different?

Camilla: She's different inside and outside. You are a monster and she's an angel. She's more beautiful than you and she doesn't have an ugly heart like you. She's very different from you.

Nandi: You are an idiot for thinking that Nandipha is more beautiful than me. We look exactly the same.

Camilla: Okay. Let's find out if you really look the same. Nandipha, please come in.

...

I was shocked to see Aunt Lydia walking in.

...

Nandi: (Laughs) How is she Nandipha? She doesn't look like me.

Camilla: Exactly what I said, remember? She really does not look like you.

Me: Uhh... Dad... What's going on?

Martin: Yes, dear. This is your mother, Nandipha.

Me: What games are you playing with me? This is Aunt Lydia; the woman who always took care of us. Yes, I love her so much, I love her like a mother but don't play me like this. Not now, please.

Camilla: (Smiles) Did I not say that God has always favored you? Your mom lived in your house as your helper and never left your side. She doesn't have memories of herself living at her parents' house, she only has Nandipha's memories living at her parents' house, why? Because she's actually Nandipha. The only different thing about her is that she is nothing like Nandi; she doesn't even look like Nandi.

Me: I... I don't...

## Chapter 61

[Flashback - Earlier At Nandipha's Parents' House]

[Camilla]

The caretaker brought us something to drink. I looked at her and looked at the glass of juice.

...

Me: Did you put something inside?

Caretaker: No, not at all. Why?

Me: What's going on here? How are you not able to recognize Aunt Lydia when she used to live here?

Caretaker: Well, the thing is I only joined this house late. My mother is the one who knows everyone who used to live here. She was the caretaker before me. She looked after this house for many years.

Martin: Wow, are you Sis Busi's daughter?

Caretaker: Yes, I am.

Martin: So how did you recognize me? I have been quietly asking myself that question. I met you years ago when Sis Busi was still working here. You were very young. I didn't think that you'd remember me.

Caretaker: (Smiles) I have a very good memory, sir.

Martin: (Smiles) You sound exactly like your mom. You are very well mannered and smart.

...

Hold on, is this really uncle Martin's in-law's house or is this uncle Martin's own house? How does he know so much about the people who worked here before? He knows the old caretaker and the new caretaker, why? Was he that in love with Nandipha?

...

Me: So if I may ask, where's the old caretaker?

Caretaker: She's at home.

Martin: Sis Busi is now old so it's understandable that she is no longer the caretaker of this house.

Me: Oh, is she also older than you?

Martin: Yes, she is.

Me: Please get someone to bring her here. She has all the answers.

Martin: Okay.

...

Uncle made a call. I looked at Aunt Lydia who looked like she was in pain. Her eyes were running around the house and she looked like she was getting a headache.

...

Me: Aunt Lydia, are you okay?

Lydia: My head hurts so much. I... this house is... I think that I know the old caretaker but...

Me: Please calm down. Don't overthink. You'll hurt yourself.

...

Tears streamed down her face as she stared at a big, framed photo hanging on the wall.

...

Martin: Lydia, are you okay?

Lydia: They passed away, didn't they?

Me: Do you know the people in the photo?

Martin: They are Nandipha's parents. They passed away a long time ago.

...

Aunt Lydia cried even more. The caretaker went to get water for her.

...

Me: Yes, I know that Thato's maternal grandparents passed away but I didn't know how they looked like. Oh, I guess Aunt Lydia really used to live here.

Martin: But how come I don't remember that? I only stopped coming to this house the moment Thato's mom... I mean, the moment Nandi betrayed me. I really don't remember Lydia living here.

Me: Yeah, it's confusing.

...

I felt Aunt Lydia's pain. Her tears touched me a lot. What is really going on? I also feel sorry for her, she can't clearly remember everything. It must be very difficult and frustrating for her.

...

Uncle Martin comforted Aunt Lydia. He hugged her and just allowed her to cry. A tear also fell off uncle's eye and I was shocked. Why is uncle crying? Does he romantically love Aunt Lydia or is he just feeling her pain like I'm also feeling her pain?

...

Lydia: (Shouts) NANDI WAS SO BAD TO NANDIPHA AND HER PARENTS. VERY BAD!! SHE WAS ALWAYS AN EVIL TWIN!!

...

Uncle broke off the hug and looked at Aunt Lydia.

...

Martin: Do you really know Nandipha?? Who are you??

...

Some old lady walked in with Njabulo. I guess she's Sis Busi. Njabulo greeted us and immediately excused himself.

...

Uncle Martin wiped off his tear and went to Sis Busi to hug her but Sis Busi's eyes were on Aunt Lydia.

...

Busi: God is great. God is really great. Nandipha, I can't believe that you are still alive after everything that happened. You never went back for treatment.

...

Hold on. What? What is this lady saying?

...

Uncle Martin broke off the hug and looked at where Sis Busi was looking.

...

Martin: Wh... what did you say?

Busi: Camilla, you are now a grown up.

Me: M... Me?

Busi: (Smiles) Mhmm. You look exactly like your parents.

...

Oh, I guess she knows my parents. I smiled and helped her sit down. She looked at Aunt Lydia.

...

Busi: What is wrong with her? Is she not able to recognize me? Is... oh, yes. The doctor had told me that she lost her memory after the accident. Is her memory still not back after so many years??

Martin: Sis Busi, I don't get it. What's going on?

Busi: (As She Points At Aunt Lydia) That woman right there is your wife, Nandipha. She was once held captive by her twin sister, Nandi. Nandi tortured her and used hot iron to disfigure her face. Somehow Nandipha managed to escape but she was hit by a truck as she was running away and was rushed to a hospital. I was called to the hospital as her kin since her parents were no longer alive. That... (Cries).

...

She pointed at Aunt Lydia again.

...

Busi: That strong woman fought for her life like crazy; she begged the doctor at the hospital to take a video of her as she revealed everything that Nandi did to her. She only fell unconscious after revealing everything. I got to know everything that happened to her because of the video she took before falling unconscious.

...

I was now in tears. Did Nandi have to be so cruel to her own sister?

...

I looked at uncle and he was shocked and shattered at the same time. He was listening to Sis Busi but his eyes were only looking at Aunt Lydia. Aunt Lydia did not have energy to even get up. She was lying on the floor and crying like never before. It looked like all her memories were back. I think coming to this house helped her regain some of her memories but seeing Sis Busi and listening to everything she is saying made her remember everything completely.

...

Busi: Her face was completely ruined because she was burned with hot iron and also got hit by a truck so the doctor had to perform surgery. Nandipha was in good hands and I was surprised that she didn't pass away after everything she went through; the doctor changed her face completely but some months later when she woke up, she had

completely lost her memory. The doctor saw it coming because Nandipha's brain was really hurt. Nandi never showed herself to this house after getting married so I brought Nandipha back here because I knew that she was going to be safe. I named her Lydia to make sure that Nandi does not ever find her.

Martin: Why didn't you tell me anything?

Lydia: Because you didn't want anything to do with me. When I was held captive by Nandi, Nandi was living as both me and her. She was planning to kill me so she had told me that she would live as me forever the moment I die.

Busi: And by the time I looked for you, I couldn't find you at your old house and you had changed your number and you had stopped coming here. I didn't know how to find you.

Me: Oh, my goodness. Sometimes anger can ruin everything.

Martin: (Cries) I am sorry. I'm really sorry. I really thought that Nandi was Nandipha and started hating Nandipha to a point whereby I had to stop coming here. I'm really sorry.

...

Sis Busi wiped away her tears and smiled.

...

Busi: It is not your fault. Nandi is the evil one.

Me: Couldn't you call the cops on Nandi after watching Nandipha's video?

Busi: I wanted to but I was scared of Johnny and Dean Jones. Those two cousins are unruly and kills without mercy. I'm sorry. I was the one who begged the doctor not to call the cops because I was trying to protect Nandipha, the doctor, me and my family. I didn't want Nandi and her husband to find Nandipha. I was going to be giving Nandipha over to Nandi by calling the cops. I couldn't do it. I'm really sorry.

Me: No. It's understandable. I know exactly what you are talking about. Are you the one who allowed Aunt Lydia to leave and work for someone?

Busi: No. She lived with me until her wounds and face were completely healed then left without telling me. I was worried about her because the doctor had told me that she should be treated twice a month for an entire

year or else her health would be bad and that she might end up dying. I recently renovated this house in memory of her; I thought that she died a long time ago. I couldn't find her anywhere. Who was she working for? Martin: Me. She was working for me. She used to live outside my house and follow me around even when I told her not to. The first time I saw her outside my house I immediately knew that her health was not the best so I looked for her this one time when she was not following me around and was not outside my gate. I was really worried and I was already used to her following me around whenever I leave my house. I was also used to seeing her outside my gate. My children also liked her so much and always brought food to her. We took her to where homeless people lived but she somehow always found her way back to our house so when I couldn't see her outside my gate, I got worried and looked for her until I found her. I found her lying on the ground somewhere and I realized that it was connected to her health so I took her to my doctor. She lived with me and my children since that day.

Busi: (Smiles) I'm old. I can now die peacefully knowing that everything worked out for the better. Both you and your wife never moved on and you actually lived together without knowing your relationship. Your wife still managed to take care of you and your children despite everything she was going through. I'm very happy. God is great.

...

Wow, God is really great. Uncle Martin changed houses so many times but his wife still managed to go back to him. Is it not God? God and the love Aunt Lydia aka Nandipha had for her family kept leading her back to her husband and children despite being driven away to the home of the homeless several times. Yes, Aunt Lydia suffered a lot and was even homeless at some point but at least she was led back to her husband and children.

...

Uncle Martin went closer to Aunt Lyd... Aunt Nandipha and they hugged as they both cried. I excused myself and called Thato to no avail. I also called Kelly and Jenna to no avail and decided to call my daddy

because I had remembered that he went to the warehouse with my sisters and Thato. I couldn't wait to tell Thato the good news.

...

[Present Time]

I looked at my loved ones and they were so hurt by what Aunt Lyd... Aunt Nandipha went through.

...

Me: Yes, that's what happened. I've said everything. I didn't leave anything out.

Thato: (Cries) People can be so cruel.

Nandi: (Laughs) She's alive but her face is fake. Plastic surgery? Who cares? It's not her real face.

Lydia: You are truly a horrible person. Yes, I went for plastic surgery so what? I still know myself. Do you know who you are? Do you even have a heart?

Nandi: (Laughs) You are...

...

My daddy did not waste time. He rolled his eyes, got hold of a gun and shot The Jones and Johnny's family members, including Johnny.

...

We all looked at him. We were so shocked.

...

He threw the gun on the floor, wiped his hands with a wet cloth and left the warehouse like a boss. Wow, those horrible people are really dead. We are now freeeeeeeeeeee!!

...

## Chapter 62

[Camilla]

Hold on, where is Sofia? I don't see her around. I completely forgot about her and the truth is I don't—I didn't want her to die. Where is she? Is she still alive or not?

...

I looked at my mom.

...



Me: Where's Sofia?

Freya: Oh, don't worry. She's safe.

Me: Please be honest, mom.

Freya: I'm being honest. You said that you now want to live as Camilla Modise and not as Khumo Jones so obviously as Camilla, you didn't want anything to happen to someone as innocent as Sofia. Sofia is safe. We took her to a safe place two days ago after you told Aiden that you want to live as Camilla Modise again.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. She hates us, doesn't she?

Freya: I don't know. She wasn't talking when we took her to our doctor. She was in trauma so because we didn't want any problems, we made her forget her memory. She will now live as a completely new person, with a new family.

Me: New family?

Freya: Yes, we decided to let her live with us. We told her that she lost her family and that she has been living with us for many years. We also told her that she's my sister's daughter.

Me: Does that mean that she will live as my cousin?

Freya: Yes. She will.

Me: Okay. Do a clean job. Make everything perfect. There should be things that proves that Sofia is indeed your dead sister's daughter.

Freya: Don't worry. Everything is under control.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, mom. Thato and her siblings are my cousins from my paternal side and now Sofia is my cousin from my maternal side. I love it. I really do. I'm going home now. I trust all of you to take care of everything here.

Freya: Okay, my dear.

...

I hugged her and left. Of course, my tail followed me.

...

Me: Aren't you tired of following me around?

Aiden: Nope. I'm not and I'll never be tired.

...

We got in the car and went to see Sofia before going home. Sofia really broke my heart. I was feeling bad for her. She couldn't remember us at all and she looked scared around us.

...

[Two Years Later]

Everything was now okay. It has been two years ever since we got rid of The Jones and Johnny's family members including Johnny. My loved ones did a great job at "cleaning" up.

...

Sofia is now very comfortable around us and she is truly happy with us. She is now known as Sofia Modise because my parents decided to adopt her. She has a loving boyfriend who is truly genuine. She used to have boyfriends who treated her bad so I used to beat them up.

...

My brother Leo is deeply in love with the lady that my daddy used to think was Kelsy two years ago before The Jones passed away. Leo has introduced that beautiful lady to us and of course I've done a background check on her. She's truly a nice person and she's not with Leo for the wrong reasons. She has been in a relationship with Leo for 8 years. Leo is now 34 years old just like Aiden so he was in a relationship with his girlfriend even before I knew that my family members were alive somewhere out there; it was all before we found one another. Leo was 26 years of age when he started dating his girlfriend. What I love about Leo's girlfriend is that she actually knew everything from the beginning. I don't know why Leo had trusted her so soon and told her everything but at least everything turned out okay. How can I not plan a grand wedding for such a lovely lady? Yes, Leo is finally getting married in the next 4 months and this time his wedding to his girlfriend will be real. Oh, and that fool already impregnated that lady. Leo's girlfriend will give birth in two months. My parents will finally experience having grandchildren; Leo's girlfriend is pregnant and sister Kelly is also pregnant so of course everyone is happy.

...

By God's grace, Njabulo's father is completely healed. He found the best specialist who took good care of him. Njabulo's parents and siblings are doing very good in life. Truthfully, Njabulo, Aunt Letty and Njabulo's entire family members are now one with The Smiths and The Modises. These three families are closer like never before. We help one another with everything and we are all equal. It's truly amazing. The three families are truly happy. Yes, we are not perfect, we may butt heads sometimes and misunderstand one another but we still love and support one another a lot. We all went for counseling two years ago after burying The Jones and others. We went for counseling for so many months because we all wanted to bury the past, move on and be completely free and happy.

Aunt Nandipha who used to be Aunt Lydia is a married woman once again. Uncle Martin and Aunt Nandipha got married again and they are very happy. Aunt Nandipha may have a different face but we love her regardless. She's truly an amazing person. She deserves so much happiness; she actually deserves everything good.

...

My mom, Freya and my daddy, Hector Modise also got married again. I mean, people used to believe that they had died and a death certificate was even issued so they wanted to get married again.

...

Some people, including the law had said that my family members were the ones who got rid of The Jones the moment my family members reappeared in the world again especially after the entire world saw how they were wronged by The Jones but because there was no proof, we got away with everything bad we did. Not to brag or anything but who can get caught with me around? I didn't raise myself from the age of 8 for nothing.

...

My family members got their entire riches back in their name and we are now living in the house that The Jones had taken away from us. We love that house so much, we are attached to it. Yes, there are some bad things

that happened in that house including my family's demise years ago but now we are recreating new and happy memories.

...

Wonders shall never end... My sister Jenna who is now 31 years of age is now in a happy relationship with Aiden's brother, Liam who is now 32 years of age. We didn't see their relationship coming but it looks like they had always dated behind everyone's backs. They are even getting married in two months. We are truly happy for them but wow, I can't believe that I'll get married into the same family as my sister. It's weird but who cares? Love is love.

...

Oh, and Thato?? Thato is such a bubbly person. Now that she can completely be herself, she stopped acting less smart. Oh, my goodness, that girl is truly intelligent. She's a true Modise. Oh, she's also in a relationship with Njabulo's brother who is now 28 years of age. Thato is 24 years old just like me. With three families being there for one another, why go outside to look for love? (Laughs) We should just look for a partner in one of the families, right?? It's funny.

...

Aiden's parents, Kate Smith and Gerard Smith are truly amazing people. Actually, all The Smiths are nice. They have accepted me and my sister, Jenna with open arms. Awww, my teacher, Kate Smith has a heart of gold. May God bless that woman and her loved ones abundantly. I will never forget how Kate Smith was always there for me from the beginning. She has loved me even before being friends with my mom.

...

Speaking of friends... Aunt Kate, Aunt Letty, Aunt Nandipha Modise aka Aunt Lydia and my mom Freya are best friends. The same thing goes to their husbands and children. Like I said, these families are living like one family. For example, My siblings and I can go to Thato's parents house and sleep there without being questioned by anyone. We can do the same thing at Aunt Letty's house and at Aunt Kate's house... the same thing goes to Aunt Letty's children, Aunt Kate's children and Aunt Nandipha's children. Another example is that we can get help from

anyone from these families; Aunt Letty and Aunt Nandipha were the ones who paid for my 24th birthday party. My mom, Freya was the one who paid for Aiden's little sister's birthday party and she's the one who pays for her tuition at school this year. Thato's 24th birthday party was definitely not paid by her parents, I don't know who paid and I don't care. There's more but I won't go on. All I can say is that we live in harmony. It's so beautiful and enjoyable.

...

Njabulo and my sister, Kelly are now completely happy and stopped with their stupid arguments. They renewed their vows last year. Now at the age of 34, my sister is pregnant. The two lovebirds, Njabulo and Kelly are expecting their babies; twins - A boy and a girl.

...

Speaking of age 34, Aiden is the same age as my sister, Kelly so he wants to settle down when he turns 35. Well, to be honest, I also want to be with Aiden and have a family with him. I am now 24 years old and I have said yes to being Aiden's wife. Aiden proposed to me on my 24th birthday some months ago and I didn't waste time, I said YES immediately and I don't regret it. Our wedding is next year on my 25th birthday and we are all excited. I truly love Aiden and I believe that he's heavenly sent. Aiden may be 10 years older than me but he never makes me feel small or try to be like my daddy, he's the perfect boyfriend and he still looks so young for his age. He legit looks like someone who is in his mid or late 20s. I love him so much and I thank God for giving me someone like him. Aiden Camilo Smith, thank you for always being patient with me and being there for me; Thank you for going through the healing process with me. You are truly the best.

...

And what about me, Camilla Modise who will be Camilla Smith on her birthday next year?? (Giggles) Yes, I have changed a lot in a good way but anyone who troubles my loved ones must still face my wrath. I still can't be crossed because I can unleash Khumo Jones whenever I am crossed. (Laughs) Well, I can now finally say that I am completely healed and that I've had my revenge. I don't regret anything I did. I am a

survivor and I'm glad that my family also survived and helped me with my revenge. I'm truly happy and finally living like a normal person.

...

The End.

.

.

.

Thank you for joining me on this journey until the end. I'm grateful and love you all so much. Please keep supporting me and check out my new story by the name "A Broken Boss Lady".

Stay Blessed, My Lovely Fam!! ☒ ☐ ☒